TO THE RIGHT *Worſhipful, Sir Georg Carey Knight,*

Knight Marſhall of her Maieſties moſt Honorable houſhould. *Captaine of the Iſle of Wight, Sonne* and heire apparent to the right Honorable the Lord of Hunſdon, my verie good Lord and Maiſter.

IT had (Right Worſhipfull) no ſooner entred my thought to handle ſome Argument, at the firſt, chiefly for mine own exerciſe, but that I found my ſelfe therunto (vn-worthie though a Wrighters creadit) leſſe ſufficient for forme, then preuented of matter; for hardly diſcourſe we that argument, whereof ſomething before, to the like effect is not extant. As for the common text, Loue, I eſteemed the ſame, eſpecially by one man, ſo exquiſitly anotamized, that to others trauailing in the like, being bereft the fleſh, muſcles, veines, ſinewes, blood, and bowels, onely remaine the bones for their exerciſe: and to worke on ſo hard a ſubiect, were (thinke I) to be as vaine

[illegible] Alchimist, who i[illegible]
[illegible]uetousneſſe, doth little [illegible]
with cunning.

In ſuſpence therefore of ſuch my pu[illegible]
to place, where at one time to viſite a ſick [illegible]entlem[illegible]
were aſſembled a Deuine, a Courtier, a Phyſition, a Lawyer, a Ciuilian, and a Countrie-man: euery of which buſying them ſelues about the ſick, had left in an out-ward Chamber ſomthing or other of their ordynarie Attire: anon entred the ſeuenth man a merrie conceyted Youth, who finding in one place ſuch variety of Apparell, and ſeuerally one after an other attyring him there withall, behaued himſelfe ſo formally, from the Pulpit to the Plough, from *Paule* his Epiſtles, to *Ouid* his *de arte amandi*, *Galen* his *de ſanitate tuenda*, *Littleton* his Tenures, *Iuſtinean* his *Pandectes*, and *Virgil* his *Bugloges*, that with no ſmall delight to thoſe preſent, he not only ſeemed the ſame in ſubſtance whom de did counterfect in action, but by thoſe his merrimentes, did alſo miniſter to the weake gentleman ſuch occaſion of extraordinarie motion, and vioient laughter, that by the breaking of an Impoſtume he ſhortly recouered.

I then obſeruing how theſe diuerſe actions, thus deliuered by one Actor, wrought, becauſe of varietie, to the Inſpectors a cauſe of mirth, and to the diſeaſed a cure of his maladie, yet both commi[illegible]y chaunce, emboldned my ſelfe in the like manner, t[illegible]h differing in the like matter to huddle vp (rudely I fe[illegible]e) my following Medlie.

The Patronage wherof moſt humbly I offer vnto your good Worſhip, with the ſame hope, which ſomtimes happned at *Rome* beyond hope to the poore Cobler, whoſe Crowe, not for *Aue Ceſar* which to pronounce ſhe was purpoſely taught, but for *opera & impenſa periit*, which came aptly and vnlooked for, was therefore accepted of *Ceſar*.

But if nothing herein ſhall happen either profitable by chaunce

ant by chance as it
me to ſay my labour is
n repent me of raſhneſſe as it once
much preſumed of his furde iacket, that
edes he would imitate the Beare to diſpoyle the Bees
of their honie: when, ſilie Ape (an adiect improper to an
Ape, if not inuironed of Bees) no ſooner had he touched
the Hiue to haue taſted the honnie, but that the Bees were
as nimble where they founde bare, as was Iacke at his bā-
quet: putting him, to late, in remembraunce, that behinde
he lay open to ſightes, and naked to ſtinges.

Yet (which beſt is) by ſo much the leſſe feare I a rough
Ayer, by howmuch the more I ſaile vnder a calme Lee,
and he that intermedleth not in *Tireſias* his doome, nei-
ther awaketh *Iuno* to him, neither needeth hee ſleepe to
Iupiter.

Onely, if your Worſhip impute not this a preſumption,
that I hope after a good ſentence, where I ſhould feare a
graue Cenſure, ſuch tolleration may adde freſh Reedes to
his Pipe, and he pipe otherwiſe to your prayſe, that
with no leſſe affection then dutie, wiſheth vn-
vnto your Worſhip all happineſſe, not
preiudiciall to true hap-
pineſſe.

W m Warner.

To th



Hould I be
the forme, or rather deton
of *Pan*, the Paſtoral God, to th
learned my skill might ſeeme
no leſſe abſurde, then to the ig-
noraunt the ſence obſcure. Let
it therefore ſuffiſe for the pur-
poſe, that the Nymph *Syrinx*, in
Arcadia, in flying *Pan* his lo-
uing purſute, was by interceſsions (as poetically it is fabled)
tranſformed into an heape of Reedes, which being ſtirred
with a gentle blaſt, and *Pan* hearing them to yeelde a ſofte
mellodious ſound, with ſeauen of the ſame Reedes, framed
to himſelfe the Pipe after her name called *Syrinx*: propor-
tionably to which number, I, a Puple of ſuch a Tutor, haue
alſo ſorted out this my Muſick. Muſick I call it, though
Midas, not for his eares, doth the ſecõd time dare to tearm
it melodious: neither, I thinke anye, except perhaps *Satirs*,
will vouchſafe to heare it: for only *Mercurie* his Pipe muſt
bring *Argus* a-ſleepe, and *Ganymedes* wring the grapes, if
Iupiter taſte the Nectar: yea, ſo forcible is a firſt Conqueſt
to deterre from a ſecond Encounter, that now *Pan*, and his
Puples hold themſelues ver well content, ſo they can their
Plain-ſong, that *Apollo* c eſcant.

And yet, let his coy Prophetiſe preſage harde euentes in
her Cell, let the Athenian μισανθρωπος, or Man-hater bite
on the Stage, or the *Sinopien* Cynic barke with the Statio-
ner, yet, in *Pan his Syrinx*, will I pype, at the leaſt to my ſelf.

Vnto whoſe rude Hermonie if, for varietie, any *Tmolus*
ſhall liſten, then let ſuch an one imagine, that piping of
loue ſome *Polephemus* is a wooer: If handling Argument
ſome *Coridon* an Interlocutor: or howſoeuer it bee, ſome
Fanus, or the Author an Actor: as not daring to be ſo ven-
terous.

Reader.

elſ-where, that in try-
ouch, to be thought a lear-
arned Auditorie, hauing rapped out
elſh, ſuch, qd. he are the very wordes in
ebrue.

But ſo farre off am I ſo to reſemble, ſo to deſemble, that might I vtter my ſcarſe indifferent, for exquiſite, yet would I not offer the ſame for excellent: onely to keepe a-looſe from Laborinthes, in which *Minotaur* is redier with a Club, then *Ariadne* with a Clue, ſufficeth to me, might alſo (curteous Reader) ſuch my conſiderate feare ſatisfie you. But what? to father my booke on *Pan*, whoſe bad nature affordeth not ſo good nurture, as to feare an offence, when all, in deede, is nothing more then a fault, and thus ſubmiſſiuely, to craue pardon for mine owne taken paines, and that, perhaps, of ſuch who will ſooneſt miſ-like, what they cannot make like, were as if an Aſſe ſhoulde bringe forth a Gennet, *Pan* a childe altogether vnlike the father, and for my ſelfe in *decorum* to degenerate: for *Pan* being clowniſh, not courtiſh, ſhould not ſing cunningly, if he ſing kindly: and why? only to be fine, were in him a fault: but in vaine is it, I know, that I feare ſuche offence.

But whether wander I? ſuffiſeth it not, that willinglye I haue ſtraitned my ſelfe to time, but that I alſo wilfullye ſo tie my ſelfe to one rude Maſter, that I degreſſe not ſo much as in good maners? not ſo, but if (curtious Reader) not calling into Account my worthineſſe, whiche claimeth leſſe then you ſhould graunte, you accepte of my willingneſſe, which is more thē you cangeſſe, he that expecteth only ſuch curteſie, & reſteth moſt deſirous to deſerue it, is alſo therefore and ſtill ſhall be, yours as hee may,

W. Warner.

Arbaces.

Calamus primus.

Cap. 1.



AT what time Zamieis Ninias, the fift Emperour of *Assiria*, sonne of Ninus, and Ascolanta Semiramis, had in battell vanquished th'accursed sonne of his father, and common enemie to mankind Cham, otherwise called the Egiptian Saturne, and sonne of Noa, then vsurping ouer the *Bactrians*: part of his Naule (vpon occasion returning by *Scythia*, was so dangerously tossed with stormes and seas, that they which seemed euen now most glorious and insolent victors, appeared then most miserable and desolate wretches. Neuertheless, after long dispayre of their liues, great losse of their treasure, and extreme danger of both, the disparkled fleete of the *Assirians* arriued at *Niniue*, one only ship excepted, wherein were imbarked more then a hundred braue soldiours, ouer whom one Sorares was captaine.

Not far from that place whereas the mountains *Taurus* and *Caucasus* begin the headsprings of all the *Asian* Seas, which take their sundrie names according to the channels wherevnto the scattered waters fal, there lieth an Iland, no lesse obscure for the situation, then vnfrequented for the infertilitie thereof: into this Iland, the ship of Sorares was by tempest driuen. Where hauing

landed his men, and repai...
he determined a further search more...
learne what commodities might there be...
to keepe his soldiors occupied, vntill time might ser
more conueniently for their departure away: and therfore
marching from his ship in good order, he pearsed a greate
part of the same Ilande, wherein he found nothing but
myrie bogges, or stiepie rockes, not worth the discouerie,
much lesse the trauell or hazarde of a conquest: and he
made it no wonder that hee founde no people there to de-
fend it, seing he himself thought euery day a yeare, vntill
he had left it.

At the length, finding the wind to be more fauourable,
then their discouerie profitable, his purpose was to retire
his men, and forthwith to haue wayed anker. But whilst
he rested in this resolution, the *Assirians* might espie (des-
cending towards them from a mountaine) two men alto-
gether vnweaponed and naked, sauing that their pined
bodies were in some parts disorderly couered with a few
vnhandsome rags: their lookes seemed wilde, their coun-
tinaunces full of beastinesse, their colour swarth, their
heare and beardes long, lothsome, and vnkembde, and (to
describe them in a word) being men in shape, they seemed
monsters in show: but yet such monsters, as were rather
to be pitied for their penurie, then to be feared for their
cruelrie.

These being come before the *Assirians*, albeit their sa-
uage demeanour sauoured more of the place of their pre-
sent abode, then of the ciuilitie (small though it were) of
the countrey wherein they were bread, yet remembring
that they were men, & that they were to deale with men,
the one of them, whose name was Arbaces sometimes a
Duke in *Media*, had these fallowing speeches...

Cap.

2.

VNhappie people (to whom otherwise I shoulde haue giuen a contrarie salutation, had not I descried your ship, a friendly instrument to rid you out of so fruitlesse an Iland) I woulde not haue you imagine that wanting swordes to expell you, wee indeuour by words to terrifie you. We are but twaine (as you see) and the only inhabitants of this vninhabitable Iland, yet twaine a greater number then that the plentie of this place is able to satisfie, not for that we are couetous desiring all, but miserable hauing nothing. Our foode is roots, grasse, and leaues, our lodging a Caue framed by nature out of the hard quarrie, our bed mosse, our apparell only such as you see, and the same the vnhappie spoiles of our hapleſſe companions: yet these are trifles in respect of a tragedie. And for that you haue partlye some experience of the place, though better cheape by all then we that haue paied dearer before to the vttermoste, I leaue you to iudge how it doth battell, by the view of our forlorne personages: saying in a word, that hell is no hell in comparison of this, or that this is hell it selfe without any comparison.

In that we liue we are not vngratefull to the Gods, but in that we are not dead we account our selues vnfortunate: for had death bene pliant to our petions, the end of our liues had bene long since the end of our sorrowes. But hope ouercomming dispaire, for that in the one is possibilitie, in the other no remedie, knowing that as the Gods haue power by iustice to punish, so they haue will by mercie to pardon, and considering that Fortune is painted with two faces, frowning with the one, and smiling with the other, that winter doth bite but sommer burnish, we haue made necessitie a vertue, continuance a custome, and patience our protector.

Whence we are our [illegible]
are your Enſignes doe manife[illegible]
reſteth as yet vntouched.

We will not feare to ſpeake, though you ſpare
ſtrike, aboundaunce of hardneſſe hath made vs hardie, the
worſt of your malice can be but death, and the beſt thing
may betide vs, ſhall bee change of our liues. We are
Meades, not monſters, ciuile people, not ſauadge Ilan-
ders, baniſhed from home through your proſperitie, and
betrayed here through our owne practiſes, once flying
your enmitie, and now following your friendſhip, as men
enforced to the firſt by your wronges, and conſtrained to
the later through our owne wretchednesſe. With this
courage neuertheleſſe (ye *Aſſirians*) we ſollicitate your
fauour, that if the old rancour of your grudge, be not yet
qualified with the newe ſpectacle of our preſent calami-
ties, our ſides (know ye) haue not as yet taken ſo much
the propertie of theſe hard Rockes, but that they will ea-
ſily giue entrance to your reuenging weapons. Albeit,
by the way, it might be ſayde, that as you are to deale
roughly with thoſe that ſtand againſt you in combate, ſo
ought you to deale mercifullye with thoſe which at your
feete lie proſtrate, for in the one your courage is not more
magnificent, then in the other your charitie meritorious:
and though it be glorious to ouercome by battell, yet is it
more glorious to be ouercome by pittie. For (alas) ſhall
men whom nature hath endued with reaſon, and vnited
in originall amitie, by occaſion of any corrupt accident,
continue more malitious than vnreaſonable or ſenceleſſe
creatures? Doth not the Plantane profit the toade in diſ-
burdening her of the ſuperfluitie of poyſon? and the ſame
neuertheleſſe, ſtand vs in ſteede to many good purpoſes,
or doth it derogate any thing from vertue, if by our indu-
ſtrie wee better the vitious? or ſhall wee cut of thoſe
limbes that are now ſound, becauſe the ſame were once
ſore?

well,

we haue bene, you will not
if our humble submission be
dent reconciliation, if you feare vs that
haue neither will nor power to harme you, if you wil not
(which is the summe of our suite) deliuer vs from hence,
that of our own accord are falne into your handes: if (I
say) it be your pleasures that we shall not weepe for vnex-
pected kindnesse, whom you shall not enforce to dread for
any practised torments, then assure your selues, you can-
not be more tirannous, then we patient, and our death
shall be more dishonourable to you, then our graues dis-
contenting to vs.

The only thing we craue is to be conuaied out of this
Iland, a small petition, and easily performed: the poizi-
nesse of twaine will not be burdenous to your barke, and
the hyer for our passage shall lighten your hartes. But
to what purpose should I vse more speeches, if you bee
mercifull enough is sayd, if mercilesse much more wil not
serue.

Cap. 3.

HOw rufully these wordes were vttered by the misé-
ble *Meade* and how effectually the same wrought in
the hartes of the *Assirians*, the passioned gestures of the
one did testifie, and the pitifull regards of the other wit-
nesse. Let it suffice, that the silly soules were pitied, their
pensiuenesse comforted, their bodies appareled, al former
enmitie pardoned, and libertie promised.

But see what an euill euent followed so good an hanfel.
In the nig't before the *Assirians* should depart, Sorares
calling diuers the cheefe of his soldiors to suppe with him
in his tab en, enuited amongst the rest the two *Meades*,
and after supper ended, he intreated the miserable Duke
to declare by what mishap they chanced into that harbo-
lesse Iland, whereupon Arbaces proceeded in this maner.

Albeit (good Sorares,
tors) the remembraunce of our pa...
little lesse then a present death to our spirits, ...
without anguish we cannot rehearse, nor you without
pittie heare, yet shall you not find vs daintie to aunswere
your request, whom we haue found so forward to yield vs
releefe.

Aboue two hundred yeares of mine age are alreadie
passed, a short time, if not lengthened out with continuall
sorrowes, the roote therof chiefly springing from *Assiria*:
and yet (good Sorares) thinke not that hauing cause to
curse your countriemen that banished vs into this Iland,
that therfore we will cease our prayers for you, by whom
our deliuerie is promised, seeing why wee should malice
you we can render no reason, but why we should honour
you we haue good occasion.

The purporte of this my speeche is to be construed to
this purpose, that as we are not to accuse you for our re-
ceaued iniuries at the handes of your predicessors, so is it
not necessarie that in malice you become their successors:
for if we shall make their olde controuersies, our newe
quarrels, it will followe, that first the worlde and all
thinges shall cease to be, before strife and discorde shall
cease to growe. But hitherto I haue bene rather tedi-
ous to your eares, then aunswering to your demaundes,
yet pardon my beginning, and with patience tarrie an
ende.

It is a worlde to note the wondrous alteration of
all thinges, euen of late dayes, for omitting to speake
of the time before the generall deluge, I will onely
glaunce at the superfluitie of this our present age.

It hath bene, yea within the time of my remembe-
raunce, that men thought themselues more sure in their
wilde a aues, then now safe in their walled Castles, bet-
ter contenting themselues with the vnforced fruitfulnesse
of the earth, then now satisfied with their fruitfull com-

pounds

...twixt plicitie of nature preſcri-
of Amb... ...ordinance law, but vtterly much curioſitie
...ſubuerteth both law and nature. What ſpeake I of
part? when it is manifeſt that no ſooner golde and ſilver
the Antipathyes from hell, had inſinuated themſelues in-
to the hartes of men, but that a generall ſubuertion was
made of all.

Nemroth then taking vpon him an vnknowne title, not
euer heard of before in all the world, much leſſe in *Caldea*,
became a king in *Babylon*: who, by ſutteltie hauing wone
the hartes of the vnpolliticke people, by that meanes got
them vnder the yoke of ſeruitude. Nemroth being dead,
his ſonne Belus hunting after greater ſuperioritie than
was by his father newly erected, pretended by warres to
dilate his dominions, whoſe vnrefull purpoſe being by
death made fruſtrate, his ſonne Ninus, your late Emperor
and our then perſecutor, did execute. Making his new in-
uention of warre a hatefull not only terrible to thoſe that
did eaſte it, but horrible to vs whiche as yet did not
feele it.

After a while it came to paſſe, that we who hetherto
did only heare much miſchiefe of warre reported, did now
ſuffer the effects of that, which of long time we feared: for
Ninus landing an armie of ſoldiours in *Media*, obtayned
an eaſie victorie againſt vs bare warriours, and in reſpect
of bolde, armour and artilerie, a people vtterlye na-
ked.

Ninus being thus conqueror, & we conquered, our king
Farnus, his wife and vij. children murdered, cõtinual like-
lihoods of an vniuerſal ſlaughter ſtill appearing, & the de-
ſolation of the whole countrey being generally expected
for, diuers Nobles of *Media*, and others not of the baſeſt
calling, to the number of 100 & vpwards, of ỹ which nũber,
& the whole number now liuing we two are, hauing con-
ueyed into a ſhippe the golde and cheefeſt treaſure of our
ſlaughtered king, and rather truſting to the incertaintie

of

of the seas, then to the inhum[illegible] banned
vious, in an vnluckie hower bolted up[illegible]rations
with teares our wasted countrey, as men compelled to
search after some new habitation.

The seas we passed were numberlesse, the sorrowes
we suffred were greeuous, the daungers we escaped were
perilous, how farre we had sayled we account not, howe
farre we should saile, we knew not, where to ariue wee
were ignorant, and all places (if fayre enough) from the
Assirians) seemed to vs indifferent.

In the end, being no lesse vnfortunate in our seafaring,
then vnexpert in the newe art of nauigation, seing our vi-
ctels to waste, our vessel to leake, and our tackling to faile,
such was then our comfortlesse dispaire, that hauing no
hope at all to escape the threatning waues, it did only for-
thinke vs that we forsooke our natural graues, in our na-
tiue countrie, to finish our liues without honour amongst
the merciless surges. But corse wanteth waite to sinke,
and lead is ouer heauie to swimme, we were not so happy
as to suffer shipwrack on the seas, being predestinate to
sorrowes on the shoare.

At the length we espied this Ilande, and making to
the same, neere about the place wher this ship now rideth,
we stroke saile: and (vnhappie men) so ioyfull to vs see-
med this our ariuall, that when promising to our selues
securitie, whs we did but newly enter into our sorrowes,
we leapt from out our ship, with mindes neuer to reenter
the same, kissing the very earth that first receiued vs a
shore: this happed about mid-day, but before night, our
mirth was thus turned to mone.

Not hauing, as yet, made any sacrifice to the Gods, be-
fore search of the profit, or vnprofit of the place, any consi-
deration care or forecast of aduerse haps whatsoeuer, we be-
gan to vnfraught our ship, laying our gold and treasure
on the next shoar. Scarcely had the last man brought the
last burthen from the ship, but that a contention fell be-
twixt

(ſeuerally before time noted and Anarice) about the diuiſion of the ſame treaſure. And ſuch was their madneſſe, that albeit their preſent plight rather required lowly teares, than haughtie titles, yet Ambition not yeelding an inch to Anarice, either of them ſought by farre diſcentes to fetch their petigrees from Iapeth and Madus, of whom we are the offſpring, as nere as poſſibly they might.

Amongſt the inferior ſort, there was one Chebron, a luſtie taule fellow, of a hote cholericke complexion, and an inuincible courage: he ſeeing the controuerſie, that now began more & more to encreaſe, bending his browes and laying hand on his weapon, ſpake many words much diſpleaſing to either of the contentious competitours. And were it not (Sorares) that I ſhoulde cloy your eares with ouer lōg a diſcourſe, I would alſo repeat his words, the which I yet remember, as (in my conceit) wel worthy the noting.

Here Sorares interrupting him ſayd: If (good my friend) it ſhal not be troubleſome for you to ſpeake, it ſhal not be tedious for vs to heare, our dayes worke is done, and it is yet but early nights, let thoſe that will ſleepe, as for my ſelfe I am prouided to wake.

And were I alſo able (qd. Arbaces) to counterfeite the magnanimitie that then appeared in his countinaunce, I would not willingly pretermit the ſame, but theſe were the words that Chebron then vſed.

Cap. 4.

IF ſo be (my vere friends and countreimen) the inuaſion of the *Aſſirians*, the ruine of *Media*, and our late paſſed perils, had ben to me by oracle or otherwiſe reuealed, I then would haue made you acquainted before hand with that which was threatned to follow: ſo might wee either haue pacified the Gods by prayer, encouraged our

ſelues to abyde the daunger
haue dyed for ſorrow: but, contrary to our
wee haue auoyded the outrage of our foes, and though
hardly yet lakly eſcaped the ſeas.

But nowe, if I that cannot diuine as a prophet, pre-
noſticate as an Aſtrologer, inuocate as a Nigromanc-
rer, obſerue as an Augur, interpret as a Dreamer, calcu-
late as a Wyzarde, or caſt figure as an Arteſte, ſhoulde
ſay vnto you, that the miſchiues yet behinde, are more &
greater than whereof we haue already our ſhares, you
(perhaps) thinking it impoſſible, would eſteeme it as a
fable, and accompt me as a foole.

O people for your inconſiderate preuiſhnes to bee pi-
tied, are your eyes cleare and yet will you counterfaite
blyndnes? haue you your ſenſes, and yet will you ſeeme
ſenſles? and ſeeing imminent diſtruction, dare you ne-
uertheles be deſperate? haue you bene ouercome by men,
betweene whom and you ought to be an equalitie, and
yet are you feareles of monſters, betweene whom and
you conſiſteth no indifferencie? muſe not at that which I
haue ſpoken, for you are likely to find more thē monſters,
being to encounter with Ambition and Auarice, thone
by preſumption, woulde reute the gods from the ſkyes,
and thother reſt vncontented to poſſeſſe their ſeates, & vn-
les both be incountred, neuther of both can be conquered,
ſuch is their vndeuiſible properties.

Know yee not (my friendes) that the ambitious per-
ſon, neither hauing gentry to elate him, reuenewes to in-
rich him, perſonage to adorne him, wit to aduaunce him,
good qualities to preferre him, or any one vertue to com-
mend him, if by the benefit of fortune her blyndnes, he at-
tayneth to dignity her forthwith becommeth a lorde like
tyrant, a vainglorious Magnifico, careles of other mens
profit, and arrogant of his own preferment: his counte-
nance is factious, his ſpeechleſſe, his meditations aſ-
piring, not brooking his ſuperiour, nor bearing his e-

quall

quall,to [illegible]nous,to all men cumberſom & not remē[illegible]a old friends that forgetth his newſelfe,

If beggers thus ſet on horſebacke ryde a galop,let vs then make accompt, that theſe claiming by gentry will ply the ſpurre. Briefly what can I ſay more,thē in effect is already experienced: ſee you not or are you willingly blinde? how theſe two gallants onely remembring what they ſometime were but not acknowledging what they preſently be, make no queſtion of our ſafety, but fall to quarrels for their priuate ſuperiority: not conſidering ỳ fire once ſquenched forgoeth both heate & brightnes,that graſſe once mowed, looſeth both ſap and greenes, & that a noble man exiled, if not of noble birth, yet of authority and honorable eſtimation ſtandeth diſgraded.

But let it be that baniſhment is no diſpargement to birth,yet ſhould we for our own aſſurance, reſpect the ſequell & haue an eie to their inclinations whom we admit to rule. For mine own part I carry this opinion,that hap theſe men no other fault, yet are they therefore vnfit for gouernment, becauſe ſo forward to gouerne: authoritie ſhould be denyed to ſuch as deſire it,& offred to thoſe that refuſe it,for a wiſe man and one well minded,neuer receiueth an office,vnles thereunto compelled,as foreſeeing ỳ the ſame to his body ſhalbe a trauell, to his conſcience a care,that he ſhalbe marked of all, enuied of many, & cannot but daunce in a net. But ſuch as are theſe our high minded intruders(whom we may therefore call ignoble, becauſe not vertuous, as hauing already paſhed at home againſt the rockes of ignomie, and now here entred into vtter ſhipwracke of the ſmall remaine of their credit,) theſe I ſay chaleng preeminence not for deſertes, but of duty peracting ỳ of vs through ambition, which they can neither diſcreatly diſcharge, nor we dangerles diſpoſe: & yet like as violent waters are prone to often eruptions, becōming ſhalloweſt within their ordinary channels,ſo proud perſons are euermore capable of higher dignities,

though not wel able, to exercē[illegible]t meane offi-
ces: ſtil doth the proud man flatter himſelf in that that he
would, not eſteeming of himſelf in any point as he ought.

There is hardly that thing ſo good, but there may be a
better, or that thing ſo bad, but there may be a worſer: the
wilde oliue is ſauerie, but the ripe figge is ſweeter, the
Tiger mangleth with her teeth, but the Baſelique mur-
dereth with her eye: there is no beautie without ſome
blemiſh, nor any blemiſh that is not either naturall or ne-
ceſſarie: no perfection with ſome imperfection, and yet
the ſame imperfection either to be cured, or tollerable:
only Ambition, vntill of it owne ſelfe it be deuoured, is
bloodleſſe for bluſhing, and intractable for taming, penu-
rie doth not decreaſe it, and plentie doth increaſe it, in wel
doing it is inſolent, in ill doing impudent.

As for the other monſter Auerice, a little daryng from
Ambition in qualitie of affection, but not in quantitie of
affecting, this (I ſay) is ſtill hunting, but euermore hun-
gering, ſtill praying, but continually pining, ſtil getting
but neuer gaining, and ſtill hoording, but neuer hauing.
For as the hollow ſpoute receaueth much water, and yet
retaineth nothing but ayre, ſo the couetous man gathe-
reth much wealth, and yet poſſeſſeth nothing but cares,
and only he of all monſters, in his rauenous deuouring is
inſatiable: for whereas commonly all other vices by old
age are impaired, his only vice is theerby repaired, the
nerenelle of the graue the rather adding to nigardiſe.

O moſt miſerable man, to whome is wanting as well
that which he poſſeſſeth, as that which he wanteth, hee
hungereth after that which he coueteth, and feareth to
loſe that which he enioyeth, and as in aduerſitie he cra-
ueth proſperitie, ſo in proſperitie he feareth aduerſitie, in
his ſuperior he dreadeth force, in his inferiour he miſtru-
ſteth theft, ſuch (I ſay) is his wretched eſtate, that he pre-
ſently ſuffereth all and ſo much as he feareth. Therefore
is it a true ſaying, that nothing may bee wiſhed more

harmefull

harmefull to a couetous heart, then long life. And (trust me) if we consider with what toile wealth is got, with what danger it is kept, what charines in vsing it, what detriment in abusing it, and with what anguish we leaue it, then shall we find more profite in pouertie, then quietnesse in riches.

One thing it is to be happie, and an other to bee riche, but detestable is the exchange, when to follow golde wee forsake the Gods: as no doubt doth the couetous man, of whom what should I more say? but that his life is detested of many, his death desired of all, and being dead, the poore man curseth, his heire reioyceth, the saints weepe, and the diuels laugh.

How harmefull (ye *Medes*) these two monsters haue bene, all the world hath found, we haue felt, and more shal feele, except being yet but yong Snakes, they bee cut off, before they grow to be old Serpents.

If these two follie Champions had bene well counceled, and not so couitous, or more pollitick, and lesse proud: then this vnnecessarie strife shoulde haue bene the last thing of a thousand, for our behookes much more necessarie: Neither would they haue perswaded themselues to be Kinges not being assured of subiects, nor haue contended for a kingdome, not hauing conquered an Iland.

Alas how much more vnfortunate are we in transporting these reliques of gentrie, and small remnant of treasure into Scithia, then in leauing the blood of our friends, and masses of wealth behind vs in *Media*.

But if you can be content to cherpe in cages, that may sing in the bushes, if you can disgest that these feast with full dishes, whilste you shall fast with emptie bellies, that they sing whilst you sorrow, that they bee adorned with chaines of gold in token of their superfluitie, whilst you shall be fettered with yrons, as pledges of your necessity. If it be your pleasures to make them your Lordes, and you to become their slaues, yet shall you vnderstand that

Chebron hath set an hier prise vpon freedome, then to exchange it for such bondage. And though it be not my meaning to be superiour to the worst here, yet thinke I my selfe equall to the better of these two, and he which hath deserued any thing at all, hath deserued more then either of them: only their new courage seemeth straunge to me, so well acquainted with their late cowardise.

Are not these the men? or were they then metamorphosed, from Egles, to Owles, or from Lions to Lambes? that whilest we applyed the pumpe, reeling vp and downe the ship could naught else but purge: that whilst we laboured on the hatches, lay quaking in their cabbens? Yes verely, these iolly fellowes are the verie same, to one of which (for not aboue one may be receiued into a kingdome) you may resigne the pleasures of your ouerpassed perrils: as for my selfe, I more account of libertie then esteeme of such pollicie, and am more zealous of your welfare, then carefull of mine owne safetie, fearing more a comming then our common scourge.

Cap. 5.

THus much Chebron with a couragious countinaunce spake, and was about to haue said more, but that he espied one of those two against whome he thus enuaied (impatient of his speeches) to aime a dart against his head: wherefore the same anger that before had occasioned him to speake, and then had tied his tongue, moued him now to vse his weapon, the which he pearced into the bowels of him that threatned the flinging of the dart: and with the like successe hee also dispatched the other standing amased in beholding his dying companion, saying: happily you shall find hell a gulfe as vnrepleatable, as your selues haue bene men vnsatiable.

Beleeue me (Sorares) whether it were the vigorious force of magnanimitie, that then proceeded from him (for

I may terme him magnanimious, whome neither flatte-
ring, nor frowning fortune can alter, that preferreth me-
diocritie before superfluitie, a common profit before a pri-
uate gaine, and an honourable death, before a thraled life)
or whether it were the timerous astonishment then plan-
ted in vs, that gaue spurres to these his proceedinges I
know not: but most certain it is, that like as ỳ shepheard
entreth into the Coote, there sequestring from amidst the
flockes, what sheepe it pleaseth him to appoint to the
slaughter, so Chebron, euen in the middle of vs, on these
two performed this tragedie: so couragious was he, and
so amased were we.

Anon, as our appaled spirits were reuiued, we began
diuersly to construe of Chebron his words, & to conceaue
of his deedes, and being amongst our selues diuided, one
part protested that he had wel done, an other company de-
tested his deede, and some not intermedling at all, stoode
as neuters. The more that Chebron intreated the facti-
ous accomplices with reason, the more they threatned
him and his adherents with rigour, so that seeing them
desperately addicted to assaute, he vnwillingly prouided
to resist: whereupon they fell from brawling to blowes,
and from wrangling to wounds, and he that now killeth,
is himselfe by and by killed.

Whilst we yet persist in this same franticke mutinie,
making horrible hauocke one of an other: Those before
named persons which either for feare durst not, or for po-
licie would not be dealers in this quarrell, these men had
loden themselues with great stores of the treasure, & min-
ding whilst we were thus busied in the fray, to haue made
a mart of our miseries, drew towards the ship, with pur-
pose to haue sailed away.

But a common souldiour, a factious fellow, smelling
out this their pretence, and getting aboord before any of
these fleshers might enter, had spyed the same in
sundrie places, the whiche hauing of it selfe sufficiente

of

of combuſtable matter, was ſ[illegible]y conſumed.

This we eſpied, and as we could not then intend it for the fray, ſo remained we ſo farre of from ſquenching the flame, that it rather reioyced vs of the ſo preuenting of thoſe daſtards, (as we did then terme them) then once thought on the miſery that hereof enſued, for hauing gold we vainly perſwaded our ſelues not to want any thing. But by this meanes thoſe that woulde thus haue fledde, were now enforced to take a part in our ciuil fight.

Still perſeuer we in mangling and murthering one an other, vntill Chebron and his adherentes had vtterly confounded the aduerſe party, and that of an hundred men and more that ariued here, within fiue or ſixe howers only xvi. remained vnſlaine, yet we (though ſo ſmall a nũber to deuide ſo great a bootie) in the ſharing had well nere begone a ſecond broile, and that day (I would wee had bene ſo happie) had ben the laſt to vs all had not night preuented our harebraine proceedings, and darkeneſſe ſtayed our deſperateneſſe. But daylight thus failing vs, euery man beſtowed himſelfe vpon a ſeuerall pile of the heaped treaſure, keeping a wakefull & ſuſpicious watche, of all that night.

As ſoone as the gray morning appeared, and that wee beheld the wooluiſh aſpects of our own ſelues with blood embrued, the dead carkaſes of our ſlaughtered companions, and looking towards the ſea, remembred the burning of our ſhip, and periſhing of our vittailes, then, then, our furious ſcarceneſſe was changed to feareful fantaſies, and our headie raſhneſſe to helpleſſe repentance. But what dwell I longer on this miſchiefe, the matter being much more dolorous that reſteth yet vnreſited.

When our handes were thus ouerſoone filled with blood, & that our eyes had ouer late emptied their teares, although our ſore limmes require reſt, yet our ſharpe appetites hunger for foode: and therefore as well pricked forwards by hunger, as deſirous to be inſtructed what a

profitable

profitable plot we had picked out for our here abode, wee discouered into the farthest circuit of this Iland. But the same seemed abhorred of the gods, and we found it vtterly abandoned of men, beastes, fowles, fruites, and euery other thing necessarie for mans behoofe: and (worser then so) we being shipplesse, and on euery side with main Seas enuironed, did also remain hopelesse of our deliuerie from hence.

Now in this melancholie, euery man laid violent hand vpon Chebron, fathering our woes vpon his late inuective wordes, whereby (in my conceit) hee rather intended quietnesse than pretended any suche quarrels: howbeit our mutinous minds altered with the time and troubles, made a newe construction of his zealous meaning, and doe what he could, we pressed him to death vnder an huge heape of golde, whose bones vnder the pile are yet extant.

After this, some of our companie not able to abide the extremitie of this climate, the stench of the ayre, and sterilitie of the Iland, by mutuall consents, made mutuall dispatch of their own persons, and shortly after vntimely death finished the liues of the residue, who being far more fortunate in dying, then wee in suruiuing, left onelye vs two the vnhappy inheritours of these vnspeakeable calamities.

Thus haue you heard (Sorares) the effect, though not the full of our tragicall ariuall, and to morrowe wee will gratifie you with so much golde, as shall partlye countervaile your great curtesie, though not comparable to the conceaued comfort of our promised deliuerie.

Arbaces thus finished his lamentable discourse, and Sorares dismissed the whole company euery man to his lodging.

Cap. 6.

THe next morning Arbaces and the other *Meade* his fellow conducted the *Assirians* vnto the piles of gold, being in a manner ouergrowne with mosse and rust. with which bootie the *Assirians* with merrie harts and many hands, had quickly fraughted their ship.

But vnceasable are the mischiefes that golde procureth, and vnsatiable are the mindes of couetous men.

Sorares being thus speed of this bootie, and hauing consulted with his countrimen of a further inquisition, began now to exact at the handes of the poore *Meades* a greater pray then wherein they coulde satisfie their auerise, hunting after that whiche was not there to bee had, and (seeking as it were) to extort fire out of water, they would not be perswaded, but the guiltlesse soules had reserued vnto themselues some greater treasure: denyall might not acquite them, nor intreaty saue them from tortures: so that hauing already passed some, to them were threatned other greater except they would promise, what (poore wretches) they could not performe.

But in the end, this diuilish deuise of the *Assirians* hastened their owne detriment: who thus dreaming of hidden treasure, for search thereof, had scattered themselues, without any one man remaining aboorde into euerye corner of the Iland. When in the meane time, Arbaces and his fellow remembring how hardlye they had bene hampered, and were still indaugered vnder those vngratefull men, whom they had euen now so bountifullye enriched, taking therefore that time as a fit opportunitie to auoyde their mynasses, boorded the vnmanned ship of Sorares: and cutting the cables, launch out at the pleasure of ỹ windes and the waues.

The *Assirians* anone (contrarie to their expectations) perceauing their ship aflote, ran like mad men vp & downe

the

the ſhoare, where by outward ſignes, and ſorrowfull geſtures, as wringing their handes, howling out, and beating their breſts, they ſignified ſuch apparent motions of their perplexed minds, that euen the two *Meades*, experienced of the ſelf ſame diſtreſſe, and moued with compaſſion towards the vngrateful people, indeuoured in al they poſſibly might, to returne back againe in their ſuccour: but all in vaine, doe what they might, contrarie windes reſiſted their mercifull meaning, carrying them quite away with an inualuable fraught of that treaſure, whiche (as before) had chiefly procured all their troubles.

Whome we leaue ſafely to ariue in *Sarmatia*, and Soares with his couetous *Aſſirians* ſhut vp in the barren Iland, as meritorious poſſeſſors of ſo miſerable a poſſeſſiō.

Of all which, of their ſucceſſe, and of other not impertinent accidents, more remaineth hereafter to be read, in that which is herein proſecuted.

(··)

Thetis.

Calamus ſecundus.

Cap. 7.



IN this meane while, after that Zamicis his imperiall fleete (excepte that ſhip of Sorares) was arriued in *Aſſiria*, albeit the vãquiſhing of ỹ *Bactrians* moued a cõmon mirth to al, yet the lacke of Sorares & his company cauſed perticuler moan to ſome, and that eſpecially to Atys and Abynados, two braue youthes, the ſonnes of the ſame Sorares, whome at his departure to the *Bactrian* warres hee had left at *Niniue*.

These two youthfull gentlemen and brethren tooke the miſſe of their father with ſuch impatiẽce, that neither inticed with their pleaſaunt welfare at home, nor dreading whatſoeuer dãgers might happen them abroad, nor yet diſſwaded by any their deareſt frendes, did voluntarily vow themſelues to continuall trauels, vntill either they ſhould heare tidings of the life or death of their father, or at the leaſt wiſe, their own dayes ſhoulde be determined by their vnknowen deſtinies.

In

In this purpoſe therefore, accompanyed with diuerſe other gentlemen, whoſe friendes were alſo milling, in a wel pauiſhed ſhip they launche frō *Niniuie*: and hauing ſailed through many ſeas, were now entred into that chanell, whereas the riuer *Arexes* leauing the ſea *Caſpium*, doth glide by the deſertes of *Scythia*. Here on the top of an hill, they deſery an auncient caſtell, and minding there (as in diuerſe other places before) to learne tydinges of that wherunto their trauel tended, they came aſhoare: and whileſt the reſt were otherwiſe buſyed, Atys and Abynados went vnto and entred the caſtell: wherein they found no lyuing creature, but yet reſpecting the ſmall oſtentatiō and curioſitie of that nation, brauely furniſhed with all thinges neceſſary.

At the laſt, entring into an inner roome, as it were a parlour, in the middle whereof on an harth was a great fier, looking vp by chaunce into the roofe, they eſpie hanging ſmooke-dryed three quarters of a man, as it ſeemed to them, not long before ſo diſmembred.

If erewhile the ayre abroade was greeuous for colde, or nowe the fire here comfortable for heate, this horrible ſight made them forgetfull of both: what might be deemed of this monſtrous ſpectacle they ſtand not to deſcant, neither durſt they hazard to ſtay the enquiry, but eſteeme it better pollicie to feare & fly what they did not yet feele, then to feele what they did feare & might flie: & therfore, ſuch was their poſt-haſte to be gone, and ſo great their feare in running away, that though to others they ran as Harts, yet to themſelues they crept as Snayles, thinking euery threaſhoole a thicket, and euery riſhe a ridge in their way.

But whileſt they thus ſkudde in their amaſednes, at the foote of the hill they were encountred by the Lorde of the caſtell, wayted vpon with a number of ſeruauntes, ſome of them loaden with ſundrie beaſtes by them newely chaſed in thoſe deſertes.

The affrighted gentlemen being now come into the preſence of the *Scithian* Lord, at whoſe handes they onely expected ſome rare tyrannie, not looking amongſt thoſe barbarous people, eſpecially in that place, to finde at all any ciuile intertainement, were by him neuertheleſſe curteouſly ſaluted, and at the length more vppon importunate intreaty on his parte, then any willingnes of their owne (for his faire ſpeech might not ſhake off their fearefull coniectures) for that night entertained his gueſtes.

Cap. 8.

When the *Scythians* had (according to their cookrie) dighted the venſon they had killed, part whereof they boyled in beaſtes hides, and other part they broyled on the coles, and when the *Scythian* Lord had ſate a ſmall while at ſupper, he roſe vp ſuddenly, vnlocking a ſtrong doze opening into that parlor, and then ſitteth him downe againe at the table.

Anone after this came forth a Ladie moſt ritchly attired, in geſture ſo comely, in countinaunce ſo louely, in face ſo amiable, in bodie ſo proportionable, and in euerie part ſo formall, that nature might not poſſiblie worke more beautie in any creature, or any creature better become ſuch largeſſe of nature: howbeit, as the hanginge vp of a net directly againſt the ſonne, doth partly obſcure the brighnes of his beames, ſo penſiuenes ſeemed ſomewhat to diminiſh the featured regardes of this beautiful Paragone.

Harde by was prouided a ſide boorde, and there (hauing made lowe curteſie) ſhe ſitteth hir downe: preſentlie whereupon her meſſe was furniſhed, onely with two or three broyled collops, cut from of the dead mans his quarters, and before her was ſet water in his ſkull: then one of the ſeruauntes taking a ribbe out of a bone, pound-

deth

dreth the same very small, and putteth it into the water.

Better, or other victuals then these (sweete soule) thee got not, and albeit her puling appetite disdayned so lothsome a diet, yet either must she thus feede, or else pine without foode: so that rather enfeebling then filling her weake stomake with these dainties, she sheddeth more teares then the quantitie of water she drinketh, and feedeth as sparingly as her fare was homely, for soone was she satisfied and as suddenly put againe vnder locke by her ouer vngentle gaoler.

No maruell though Atys and Abynados were nowe afresh drowned in their dompes, and had small liking to their meate, who not yet freed of their former feare, sawe new occasions of greater dreade: they pitie the Ladie & doubt their owne safetie, wishing her at large, and themselues out of ieopardie: for (thinke they) seeing this tyrant handleth thus vngently so gallant a Ladie, making the murdered carcases of men meate for those whome he hath reserued to further miserie, what shall become of vs wretches, how are we intrapped, and what death hath he for vs prepared?

The *Scythian* Lorde perceauing by their outwarde shewes their inwarde feare, cheereth them vp with a curteous welcome saying: gentlemen, you (perhaps) from whence you are come, accustomed to fare more finely, cannot acquaint your selues to feede here so grosely, yet we that are the chiefest in *Scythia* doe couet no better, and could be contented with worse, not esteeming any thing or any more to be needefull, but onely that and so much as is presently necessarie: full furnished tables (say we) breede feeble surfets, but meane repastes make healthfull persons.

We knowe that fewe thinges suffiseth nature, that superfluitie is a meere vanitie, that ouermuch meate sotteth the sences, that beanie cuppes make lighte heades, that curious Cookes make carefull maisters,

that

that prodigalitie endeth in beggerie, and that gluttonie is oppolite to vertue, and yet (alas) what fowle flyeth, what fiſhe ſwimmeth, or what beaſt paſeth that man buryeth not within his bowels? howbeit man that ſo often deuoureth death in other creatures, is himſelfe at length by death deuoured.

With others, change of ſeruices and coſtlye intertainement, is an occaſion of ſeldome meetinges, ſlender familiaritie, and therefore ſmall friendſhip: but with vs Welcome couereth the boord, Temperance marſhalleth the diſhes, and friendly Acceptance ſetteth on the boider: and onely he whoſoeuer that ſeeketh a ſumptuous hoſt, is in *Scythia* accounted a ſaucie gueſt.

As for daintie foode or any like effeminacie, it is as rare here, as elſewhere commõ. The theeues affright vs not for our mony, the mothes harme not our wardrops, the waſpes waſte not our ioncates neither make we our ſtomacks Apoticaries ſhops: but hũger maketh al meats to vs righte ſauerie, and thirſte theare water as pleaſant as *Nectar* we feede for the moſt parte but of one diſhe and that not very daintie, we vſe but one coate and that not very coſtly, and poſſeſſe but one houſe, and that (as you ſee) homely: yea and I ſpeake now of the beſt, not of the moſt, that lacke of thus well, and yet like as well, not wanting any thing, that content themſelues with euery thing: pouertie yeelding vs this aduauntage, that whereas for wealth, other nations be inuaded with warre, the lacke thereof keepeth vs at home in peace.

Neither feare we to fight, if occaſion ſhall ſerue, for although we ſhunne all cauſes of controuerſie, yet know we howe to reuenge proffered iniuries: and that can all *Aſia* well witnes, whom we euen we the *Scythians*, haue three times in open fieldes conquered, and our bowes made them three times vnto vs tributorie.

All this while the two breethren continue diſmayed, by reaſon of the ſightes they had lately beheld, taking

ſmall

taking ſmall delight in thoſe his ſpeaches: whereuppon their gentle hoſte brake of his former argument, & ſpake to his gueſtes as followeth.

Cap. 9.

WEre it not (gentlemen) that I my ſelfe am partlye priuy to ſome ſufficient cauſe of your ſadnes, I could not but iudge you either verie ſolitarie, or ſomewhat ſullen (but truſt me) my ſelfe a ſtraunger in an other place as you are here, and ſeeing that which you haue here ſeene, coulde not but imagine and feare aſmuch, or more then you haue feared: but the reaſon why I haue ſuffred theſe your dumps and not reſolued your doubtes, was becauſe I gladly woulde haue ouerpaſſed that in ſilence which will be more greeuous to me in reſitall, then what you here behelde hath bene to you dreadfull, herewithall the water ſtoode in his eyes, and adding a ſmall pauſe to the ſheddinge of a fewe teares, he thus proceedeth.

You ſhall vnderſtande (qd. he) that the curſed owner of yonder ſame diſmembred quarters, was almoſt from his cradell to me and mine a vowed enemy, by whom I often receaued much ſkaeth, but coulde neuer acquite my ſelfe of his enuie.

Know ye alſo, that the ſame Ladie, whom you behelde euen now in this place, was (without ſuperſtition bee it ſpoken) the adored goddeſſe of mine amorous deuotions, the emperious Miſtreſſe of my martired heart, and the onely ſhee that helde me in loyaltie: whoſe beautie was my bliſſe, whoſe ſweete countinaunce was my ſole comforte, and to whome more then to my owne ſelfe I liued.

Shall I tell you? for her ſake was I paciente of all labours, hentorous of al dangers, careles of all cumbats, and deſperate of all deathes: for in loue is nothing di-

ficile, but as the Hunter plyeth his Houndes, the Falkner his Hawkes, and the Fisher his Angle, forgetting the paine through delight of the pastime, so the louer prosecuteth his loue esteeming all labours and troubles but trifles, in respect of the inning hope of his amarous harueſt: yea and by howe much deeper loue hath taken foundation, by so much the more sweeter is it in operation, sauoring altogether honie, and not senting gaule.

What shall I say? so pleasaunt, and stedfast was our mutuall loue, vntill on her parte violated, that it might haue bene made a question whether of vs was the louer, or which the beloued, our two heartes being (as it were) to either bodie common.

But as good Ladies are sometimes ouer lightly affianced, so light wantons are often ouer firmely fantasied: nay (alas) it is commonly seene that trust hath the sayrest tract leading to treason, and that in securitie we finde greatest sorrow.

This ponkar (whose guile hath bene thus rewarded with a deserued guerdon) when nowe no farther hope was left for the exercise of his malicious madnes against me, applyed then mine owne weapons to worke vnto my selfe woundes: solliciting secretly by louing nay lustfull tables this wicked woman.

Wicked may I well terme her: and wo-man, for that sert is an apte *Etymologia*. Ah gentlemen or euer I passe to my penaunce, which will be the ripping vp of Thetis her inconstancie, either suffer me to chewe vppon my melancholie, and (perhaps) choke, or else giue passage to my choler, so happely to ease mine heart with a chafe: which chafe I wilhe may be to you a caution, as the cause thereof is to me a corasiue: for though Thetis is not euerie woman, yet followeth it not but that euerie woman may proue a Thetis, and then, were there no other Philosophie but implication, yet women might

iuſtly be termed monſters in nature, as ſome (how cunningly or curiouſly I iudge not) doe note them.

But what talke I of their natures, that can tell much more of their maners, O that I had bene more carefull in auoyding their companie, and leſſe cunning in deciphering their conditions.

What elſe are they (I accuſe not all, and may not excuſe a many) but ineuitable plagues, conuenient noyſances, naturall temptations, couited calamities, houſholde hoſtilitie, and dilectable detramentes: whom wee cannot want without offence to the gods, nor holde without damage to our owne perſons: if ſhee be fayre ſhee is wooed and reddily checketh, if foule ſhe wooeth and euer chooketh.

Good wine lacketh no taſters nor fayre women ſuters, with an eaſie price and an iuie buſh bad wine alſo is vttered: if ſhe be poore then ouer chargeable to him that ſhall keepe her, and then ſhee flincheth: if rich, ouercurious for him that ſhall catch her, and then ſhee fleeceth: outwardly with arte is ſhee pulliſhed, howſoeuer inwardly polluted: her face painted, her beautie borrowed, her haire an others and that frilled, her geſtures enforced, her lookes premeditated, her backe bolſtred, her breſt bumbaſted, her ſhoulders bared, and her middle ſtraite laced, and then is ſhe in faſhion, when moſt out of faſhion.

Beſides her attire, eies hath ſhee to entiſe, teares to excuſe, lookes to attract, ſmiles to flatter, embracements to prouoke reſiſtaunce to yeelde, frownes to delay, beckes to recall, lippes to inchaunt, kiſſes to enflame, and all theſe to poyſon, applying thus to euerie member and motion a ſeuerall arte.

Se prieth in her glaſſe like an Ape, to pranke her in her gaudes like a puppet, but being prumed (as ſhee pretendeth) to the purpoſe, yet doth ſhee but hurte nature with arte, and marre forme with faſhion, and

is like to the gloe worme, that is bright in the hedge, and blacke in the hande.

Shee discouereth that sometimes willingly, which shee woulde seeme to haue done vnaduisedly, shee promiseth one thing, and performeth an other, professeth chastitie, but practiseth the contrary: loue hir and you loose hir, make straunge and you winne hir, offer and she disdayneth, denie and shee dyeth, prayse hir and she pranketh dispise her and shee powteth, but (O diuell) if taken tardie, then hir tongue vttereth such arte, that either shee auoydeth cunningly the suspition, or leaueth the matter doubtfull in suspence.

Teares hath shee at commaundement, and those of two sortes, weeping often for anger, and seldome for sorrow: of hir two extremes, Loue and Hate, hir loue is a minute, but hir hate a monument. As redily doth shee leaue as rashly shee doth loue, being as prone to mutabilitie as desirous of variety, changing for pleasure, but chusing for profit: and if at one time shee hath twentie sundrie clyantes, yet can shee please eche man with a contrarie countinance, and dismisse them all at hir pleasure, hauing soiled their sences, and soaked them of their substance.

For small goodnes shee claymeth great commendations, but for great euill, hateth any controulemente: hauing charge ouer all shee complaineth of seruitude, being abridged of parte shee exclaymeth of mistruste, if shee be wise (at the least in her owne conceite) then with a preatie singularitie shee will ouerrule all, if foolish, then with a peeuishe simplicitie shee will not bee ruled at all, the first will be to brauely minded, the latter to baselie manered, the one opinionate, the other obstinate, but both comberfome.

Politicklie is shee wone, and peeuishly is shee lost, either doth not the rich mans dalliances feede hir eie, or the poore mans diet fitte hir dalyaunces: euermore

imperious,

imperious, impatient, importunate, selfewilled, thankelesse, and full of reuenge.

Shunne (yong men) I say shun, except out of golden cuppes you will drinke poisoned draughts, to be guests in the guiles of these sweete sower Panthars: otherwise make account to find them such waiward fooles to please, and such foolish wantons being pleased, that if in winning they did trauell you, in wearing they will vtterlye tire you.

But see, lauish fellow how rashly hath my tongue run counter: e ouermuch choler (I feare me) hath so mistempered my wits, that it is doubtfull whether I haue vsed *decorum* in words. If therefore any modest matron, wife, or maiden had bene here present, either I would thã haue spoken in the booke, or could be contented to beare a Fagot for any probable heresie: and no doubt they would pardon my glibbe toung in respect of my gauled hart, for blameless may loosers chaule.

Well, best is no women are here to trauerse my cholerick alligations, for hardly finde wee any pleading so formall, wherein the iudge (especiallye if fabouring the cause) cannot, or at the least doeth not assigne errors.

Cap. 10.

THis my digression gentlemen (qd. the *Scythian* Lord) hath longer detained your teeth from your victuals, then ỹ discourse it selfe might haue displeased your eares, for the villanie: and yet would I borrow your patience a little farther, for as I haue spoken somewhat of the infirmitie of the feminine sexe being the matter wrought, so would I breefely touche the impietie of lust, the meane working, by both whiche I haue bene wronged, and by both which you may be warned.

From this freating frenzie, though of most vile and

Libido deplor.

base condition, neither the mightie Potentate, nor the meane peasant, the valiant victor, nor the cowardly carle, haue ben or be exempted. And the reason why it so easilye ouercommeth and so extremely outrageth, is for that it promiseth to them trust whom it killeth with blindnesse, leading men euen with willing cordes to the pleasaunt court of vanitie, being garded thether by conducte of Aboundaunce and Prosperitie: in which courte Gluttonie doth dyet them, Letcherie doth chamber them, Pryde doth apparell them, Sloth doth accompanie them, and Follie in all thinges followeth their humours. But whilste Tediousnesse doeth here perswade that none maye come to heauen vnlesse they iournie barefooted vpon sharpe pointed bodking, Securitie dryueth on his sleepie Chariote, and bringeth them to Hell, as it were on softe Featherbeds.

Like as fire worketh wood altogether into fire, so Lust wholy alienateth man into lasciuiousnesse: for if once it entreth the eye, it anon scaleth the head, and at length sacketh the heart, and then (alas) the heart by degrees readily delighteth, consenteth, fulfilleth, continueth, despayreth, confirmeth, commendeth, and not (but too too late) repenteth the act.

This lasciuious passion (I saye) besides that, that it bringeth wealth to want, great possessions into smal purses, it also effeminates the mind, enfeebleth the body, slandereth the person, & endangereth the soule: yea it leaueth the body in such debilitie, that it maketh the same altogether vnapt to any good action, and so inferreth the mynd, that it vtterly disharboreth euen the least motion to amendment, so that body, mind, and man, become wholy vitious.

Lust hauing forerunners, Yeate and Wantonnesse: companions, Securitie & Vncleannesse: pursuers, Greefe and Repentance: whose matter is Gluttonie, whose flame is Pryde, whose sparckles is Ribaldrie, whose smoke is Infamie, whose ashes is Filthinesse, and whose ende is

Vermis

Vermis & vmbra, flagillum, frigus, & ignis,
Demonis aſpectus, celerum confuſio, luctus.

And albeit the pleaſure paſſeth away in a triſe, no ſooner done but forgotten, and the puniſhment is permanent, yet ſo delightfull is the preſent ſweete, that we neuer remember the following ſower.

Cap. xi.

FRom whence then may we fetche tried medecine to applie to this vntoward maladie, when *Agnus Caſtus* is ſo geaſon to cure, and *Mandragora* ſo commõ to procure, beleeue me my gueſts, for the auoiding both the miſchiefe it ſelfe, and the inconuenience growing thereby, ſix rules are eſpecially to be obſerued as maximes.

The firſt whereof is Sobrietie in diet, for it is often ſeene that in wine many thinges are done vnaduiſedlye, Saturitie working acceſſe to venerie, and they haue ben at a wanton banquet willingly conquered, that but euen now diſdained parlie with the aſſailent. The ſeconde is ſome bodily labour or ſtudious exerciſe in ſome honeſt action, wherby is preuented all ſuch lewd toyes, and vaine meditations, whereunto the minde, neuer but well or ill occupied, is eaſily entiſed: for ydleneſſe is to a liuing man a ſepulcher, but labour the minds medicine.

The third is decentneſſe in attire and outwarde ornaments, the which we are to vſe for colde, not for colour, as couerings of our nakednelle not as allurements to licentiouſneſſe: for with the Gods, to intend is to treſpaſſe, to will is to worke, and in either the offence all one.

The fourth is diſcreetely to reſtraine the libertie of our ſences, not ſo to looke on the ſunne that we dim our eyes with the brightneſſe, not ſo to touch the berrie, that wee draw blood with the brier, not ſo to taſte honie, that wee bee ſtung of the Bee, not ſo to heare melodie, that we neglect modeſtie, nor ſo to ſmell ſweet odours, that wee ſente

not

not vnſauerie ordoures: but ſo to ſee, touche, taſte, heare, and ſmell the inticing lullabies of beautie, and flattering preparatiues to Venus, that by forecasting the inconuenience, we may the eaſilier eſcape the miſchiefe: for repentaunce was neuer but a looſer.

The fift is, Sieldome wordes, and thoſe with ſobrietie, not by euill ſpeeches to corrupte good manners: for what contenteth the eare, to that readilye conſenteth the hart. And becauſe (if for no other cauſe) he that is ſtill accuſtomed to ſpeake ill, is by good reaſon ſuſpected not to doe well, Ribaldrie is therefore not ſlightly to be reprooued: for well it is ſayde, that the mindes image is the toung, and ſometimes of wordes ſpoken but in meriment haue proceeded occaſions working to a miſchiefe.

The firt and laſt is, To conquer opportunitie, whenſoeuer we are offered the executing of our purpoſed lewdneſſe: for albeit we find the perſon pliant to performe, the place apt for performaunce, and the time conuenient for performing, yet at that very inſtant ſhould we remember, that we ought not to doe all that we would, nor ſo muche as wee maye, but onely that whiche is lawfull and honeſt.

But (my good gueſt) for ſo much as I cannot but confeſſe that this inordinate petulancie, delightfull euil, and ſweet poiſon, Luſt, is far more eaſie to be controled of all, then corrected of any one, as an infirmitie naturally (if I may ſo ſay) proceeding from our corrupt fleſh, and the oppoſite thereof more currant in praiſe, then conuerſante in practiſe, I will therefore here lay a ſtraw, and proceede to the matter from which I haue thus far digreſſed.

Cap. 12.

ARmatrites and Thetis (for Armatrites was his name) what by ſending and reſending of often tables and tokens (as I began to tell you) had concluded vpon their diſhoneſt

dishonest enterprise, and making sure of mine absence, had many meetings at this my castle: where not simplie contenting themselues with shameless coiture, they had also sorted the platforme how to haue murthered me.

The nighte came wherein my death was determined, in which *Stratagem* disloyal Thetis should haue none execution. But as we lay a-bed amorously toying, as is the trade of Louers, shee suddenlye fetched a deepe sighe, great plentie of teares then also brasting from out her eyes: whereat I no lesse amazed then greeued, as he that esteemed himselfe so long distempered, whilste I deemed her in any thing disturbed, making my preparation with a prayre or leash of kisses, did earnestly demaund the cause of suche her passions: but shee not able of a long tyme to vtter any worde for weeping, at the length clasping her armes about my neck, and repaying my kisses with more then double interest, thus answered me.

Ah my louing Lord (quoth she) for so much as to disclose the cause of these mine extraordinarie teares, the whiche priuately concerne mine owne selfe, and nothing at all touch you, would be but the new remembrance of an olde sorrow, the which by silence may be in time suppressed, by resighrall in memorie the deeper impressed, maye it therefore please you of pardon, in that I am vnwilling to rehearse that, which I would (if it might be) so willingly forget. I being blinded with loue, and ouertaken with her daynntes, and not minding to vrge her any farther then should stand with her own contentment, questioned with her no longer as touching this matter: but for that I perceaued her mind to be perplexed, I my selfe was woonderfullye disquieted, and so laye musing of all that nighte, withoute sleeping anye one winke.

And (beleeue me) if euer any man were beholding to sorrow, thē I of al other haue best cause to cōmend sorrow

which kept me awake, and waking aliue.

For albeit her mischieuous mind (I wot not howe relenting) did seeme now almost reclaimed from suche her murtherous intent, yet (as she her selfe afterwardes confessed) her new and erreuocable zeale to Armatrites had so ouermastred reason, that after a long combat betwixt pietie and crueltie, as she that would not haue attempted any thing to the annoying of me, could she otherwise haue attained to the inioying of him, was fully resolued to haue finished my life, if happely of all that night she had taken me napping.

But I not doubting at all any such wrong measure, hauing ouer night appointed with my huntesmen to bee early stirring, as soone therefore as day appeared, taking a louers leaue an hundred times at her lips, & leauing her a bed departed towards the desart: where by a straunge chaunce I got intelligence of such their false packing.

Cap. 13.

ARmatrites had a very beautifull concubine, who (I know not by what meanes) finding out ẏ new haūt that her sweete hart vsed to Thetis, seing her self (as it seemed) to be now scanted of that pleasure which before time she possessed, and therefore not meanely offended at suche his trecherie, when by no meanes she could intise home againe Armatrites, waxed then starke madde with anger, and not minding to die in his debt, that so discurteously had giuen her the gleeke, but enuying alike both him and his new chosen trull, sought opportunitie to reuenge her on them both.

Scarcely had I gon three furlonges, but that I mette her posting toward this place, and although before time I knew her very well, yet anger had now estranged her countinaunce: but she with these homely salutations thus renewed our old acquaintance.

Thinke

Thinke not thou Mittole (qd. she) that thy gay titles, or thine vsed or rather abused auctoritie amongst vs in these partes, shall so hinder my tongue, but that I dare to tel thee a troth: how commeth it to passe, that thou which oughtst to be a punisher of offenders, art now becom a fautor of offences? that thou which art so zelous in doing iustice abrode, art so partiall in winking on vices at home? If the law maker may also be a law breaker, it will bee to small purpose that I accuse thee of the often meetings of Armatrites and Thetis at thy castell, thy countinaunce bolstring their incontinency. But if the breach of lawe in the magistrate, is more offensiue then in the meane subiect, for that by his course the vnskilfull companie are chiefely directed, then tell me (thou Pandar) how canst thou excuse thy selfe of iniustice, or auoyd the reproche of this trumperie.

What is it possible that the auntient enmitie so long time continued betwixt Armatrites and thee, shoulde thus suddenly be grown to so familiar an attonement, as that thou canst be contented not only of an olde foe to make a new friend, but also so kind harted as to hold Thetis with him in coparcinerie? thou challenging thy propertie by night, and he chāhering her as properly by day: it is (belike) his office to keepe her warme in bed, whilst thou (as warrantable for thy head, as thy game for their hornes) art hunting abrode.

And lookest thou man so grimme, as if thou wert offended I should charge thee so deepely? doest thou blush, as if but euen nowe ashamed of the bawderie? or arte thou dumme, as if thou wouldst pleade ignorance in a matter so manifest? if thou art offended I am careless of thy displeasure, if ashamed, it is not without good occasion, if thou hast bene or diddest counterfeite to be ignorant, now say not but thou art sufficiently warned, yea so warned, that euen now the time serueth for triall.

What therefore doth let (vnlesse thou art well ynough

pleased with such patcherie) to proceede in punishment against so detestable harlots? Oh that I had the slitting of the strumpets nose, and these nayles of mine the scratching out of their eyes.

Cap. 14.

WHilst she yet persisted in harping forth this and suche like vntunable hermonie, I neither rashly crediting the vnsuspected accusation, neither yet obstinately yielding to the partialitie of mine owne affection, leauing her in the middle of this her mad musick, returned home long or euer I was looked for, and rushing suddenlye into the chamber, I founde the naughtie packes in bedde together.

Who perceiuing me, and being euill apayed of the presence of so boysterous a Chamberlaine, began to reare themselues vpright in the bedde: but as Armatrites sate hanging downe his head as it were dead in the neast, not so much ashamed of the beastly fact wherewithall he was taken, as fearing the disaduantage whereunto his euill fortune had now brought him, I at one sweepe pared off his head, euen hard at his sweete-harts side. She looking for the like, and I meaning no lesse, sitting bathed in the gushing-out blood of her paramour, and bitterlye bewayling the breach of her loyaltie towardes mee, did of her owne accorde constantlye humble her selfe to dye, offering her naked brest to bee pearced of my threatning weapon.

But had I the hart (thinke you) to bestow my weapon in that beautifull bosome of hers which I accounted euen now the increase of my solace, and decrease of my sorrowes? no no (howsoeuer you thinke my head worthye or vnworthye the arming) yet will I not omit a veritie: thrise my hart fully purposed her death, and thrise myne hande wielded the Weapon to haue bereste her of life,

but

but thyſe both hearte, and hande fainted and failed in perfoꝛmance thereof.

In the ende caſting downe my partiall weapon, and withdꝛawing my ſelfe into an other chamber, after that I had a good while deliberated of the matter, and ouerchildiſhly lamented the manner: I reſolued vpon this determination, that is, that the miſerable woman ſhoulde ſtill liue, deteſting neuertheleſſe vtterly to diſpence with her lewdneſſe: and thereſoꝛe foꝛ punithment I enioyned her this pennance, neuer to taſt any other ſuſtinance, vntill time ſhe hath buried within her owne bowels, the whole carcaſſe of her lybidanous parramour.

This pennance in my diſpleaſure haue I vnaduiſedly vowed, and this vowe at moꝛe leaſure haue I repented, foꝛ the ſuffring is not greater to her, then the ſight thereof greeuous to me: and were it ſo (what ſhall it aduauntage me to diſſemble) that I coulde without offence, abſolue my ſelfe of the vowe I haue taken, I woulde moſt willingly diſſolue her from the woes ſhee taſteth: but foꝛaſmuch as vowes made to the gods, are not to bee reuoked at the diſcretion of men, I eſteeme it better, that ſhee by coꝛrection become hereafter penitent, then that I by infringing my oathe, and ſhee by eſcaping vnpuniſhed, become either of vs repꝛobate.

Thus the *Scythian* Loꝛde with wet cheekes finiſhed his tale, and Atys and Abynados were freed of further dꝛead, though not a little gricued of ſo amiable a Ladie her infelicitie.

But after their honoꝛable hoſte had frankly giuen in commaundement, that the dꝛie booles ſhould be plentifully controwled, & ỹ the wine with often quaffing had now animated their courages, in the end the parſonable pꝛopoꝛtion of Thetis was rather wantonly remembꝛed then her penance by them with any extraoꝛdinary pitie regarded: foꝛ they were well, & all was well, & ſo it cõmonly fareth

with churles, that forget in their chaires the ſuccurles in the colde.

Thus what with longe watching and deepe drinking, ſufficient quarrel being miniſtred to the pillow, ech man did ſacrifiſe to the god of *Ebona*, vnder the harmeles protection of whoſe drowſie deitie I now leaue them.

But if any ſhall inquire farther as concerning Thetis, my aunſwere muſt then reliſh after the Oracle at *Delphos*, that euermore left the certaintie of thinges to vncertaine euentes, and howſoeuer it hapned with or contrarie to expectation, yet ſtill the euent made good the oracle: it may be, and perhaps not, that Pan hereafter in a ſeconde parte will pipe more of Thetis, vntill when, take what I tender for preſent payment, and what I promiſe as a deſperate debte.

In the meane, time being deſirous to keepe others waking with ſome exerciſe that may happely tende to their ſollace, whileſt I leaue Atys and Abynados. ſleeping, as the beſt remedie for their ſurfets, I ſhall make reũtall of ſome matters canuaſed a ſhipborde, whileſt they two are thus intertained of the *Scythian*.

Belopares

Belopares.

Calamus tertius.

Cap. 14.



The long tariance of Atys, and Abynados being thus intertayned at the caſtell, cauſed thoſe in the ſhip diuerſly to deſcant of the matter, euerie man giuing a ſeuerall verdict as touching ẏ preſumed cauſe of their abſence: and by how much they were aſſured of the fierce maners of the *Scythians*, by ſo much they feared the ſafetie of the two breethren.

But betaking the gentlemen, and the whole company of the ſouldiers, and ſaylers abroade, to their naturall reſt, you ſhall be partaker, onely of the communication that paſſed betweene the maiſter, the maſters-mate, and the Pylot, whileſt theſe three, not vpon any neceſſarie conſtraint, but of their voluntarie conſent, vndertooke to furniſh the watch for that night, in their owne perſons.

The Moone wanted nothing of hir perfit light, the clearenes of the ſky, and brightnes of the ſtarres adding as it were a ſeconde moone in the firmament, tempeſtiuus *Orion* threatned no ſtorme, neither was any aier or element contrarie the ſilence of a generall calme: theſe comfortes, being in part counterchecked, againſt the fantaſticall coniectures of the three carefull watchmen, moued

ued them in walking all the night vp and downe the hatches, to discourse many arguments, and participate diuerse straunge aduentures: and after the ripping vp of many daungers, distresses, and shipwrackes which them selues before time had hardly escaped, the euill fortune of Sorares, and his companie after whom they were then to enquire, with the present absence of Atys and Abynados then newely missing, did giue occasion vnto the Maisters-mate to burst out into these speeches.

My poore parentes (qd. he) dying long agoe, left me to the wide worlde, a rawe thing God wot, and verie yong, without either wealth, friendes, or wit: so that being left in this daungerous estate, I continewed many yeares as desperate a race, and had I not chaunced by hap-hassard, before my too much libertie had made me ripe for the rope, to haue gotten into a gally, I had (no doubt) eare this day, with the prise of my necke, payed tribute to the gallowes, and therefore considering that I haue begone seafaring in youth childishly, haue practised it since desperatly, and must nowe continewe it of necessitie, I neede not greatly blush, though I speake somewhat against mine owne profession, to the practise whereof, I haue bene thus by chaunce-medly constrained: but were mine abilitie such that I coulde liue and leaue it, as I am forwarde to dislable and mislike it, I woulde sooner receiue a poore Cottage within the compasse of one small Citie, then a Safe-conduct, or (if it might be) a Charter to compasse the great and rich *Ocean*.

But leauing to speake of my selfe, I cannot muse enough at those wilde yonglinges, or witles fondlinges, whom neither the affaires of their prince or countrie compelleth, want of libertie at home constraineth, lacke of maintenance enforceth, traffique abroade occasioneth, hope of profit inticeth, or any other necessary cause procureth

procureth thereunto, can notwithstanding be contented to leaue their natiue countrie and parents, in whom and by whom they haue bene bread and fostered, their wife and children, vnto whom they are by law and nature vnited, their friendes and kinsfolke at whose handes they are to receiue counsell and comfort, and in straung countries to consume that their liuelihood and substaunce, which them selues lyuing, might with ioye possesse, and deade, their posteritie shoulde by law inherit.

Being onely caried away, with a fonde desire to vew vnknowen nations, and curious monumentes, setting forwardes in iollytie, but sayling forth in ieoperdie, launching out in their ruffes, but hayling in, in their ragges: yea they are ignoraunt, that when after this order they fraught the ship with their wealthe, they vnballace their heades of wit, exchanging their warme gownes for colde iackes, their softe pillowes for harde couches, their sweete chambers for stinking cabbens, their braue walkes for the bleake hatches, their sweete wine for stale water, and their fine dainties for grosse diets: if sickneſſe falleth (which seldome fayleth) Phisitions loue not the seas, and therefore phisicke not to be founde in shippes, as for Chyrurgions their skill is in woundes, but not in vrines, so that the poore patient hath (perhaps) leaue to liue as longe as he may, and no man letteth him to die as soone as he will: where sometimes he findeth this friendshippe, that to ridde him of languour, in steade of *aqua vitæ*, they minister *aquam marinam*, toplinge him ouer shipboorde, some life yet remaining, and then as the sea is his sepulchre, so perchaunce a Raſcals purse is his treasurie.

Neither doth so happie an ende as this happen to all, for sometimes the ship runneth a ground, and then both ship and man perisheth, sometimes it lighteth on a rocke, & then speede they no better, sometimes they are boorded by Pyrates, and then it hapneth them worſer, sometimes

through long tempest, victuals consume and they famish: sometimes a storme driueth them perforce vppon the costes of their enemies, who either make them bondslaues, or (which is rather to be wished) dispatch them with tormentes: sometimes are they cast ashoare, either in desertes where wilde beastes deuoure them, or else among such people as make foode of their carcases: sometimes the meeting billowes doe cleane ouerwhelme them: sometimes the following waues doe quite ouerturne them, and euermore a thinne boorde onely is betwixt them and perishing: so that what with these, and many such lamentable accidents, are they continually endaungered, the feare much more tormenting, then the death it selfe would be grieuous.

And yet (forsoth) all these notwithstanding, some in a brauerie must saile vnto *Mymphis*, there to vewe the *Piramides*: some vnto *Babilon*, to see the walles of Semiramis: some vnto *Caria*, to gaze on Mansolus his tombe: some vnto *Ephesus*, to beholde the temple of Diana: some vnto the isle *Pharos*, to suruay the tower *Pharos*: some vnto *Olympia*, to looke one the yuorie image of Iupiter: some vnto *Rhodes*, to pyie on the monsterous stature of *Phœbus*: some into one countrie and some into an other, and all in the ende returning (if euer they returne) more bitten with their expences, then bettered by their experience: ouermaistred by straunge manners, that could not be maisters of their owne affections.

For as they wilfully leaue their friendes and Countrie, so (which often hapneth) vnwittingly they forsake their gods and religion: if in *Assiria* they adored Adad and Adargatis, in *Babilon* Belus, and in *Caldia* Ori masda: the same must worship in *Ægypt* Osyris, and Isis, in *Persia* Mithra, in *Ausonia* Faunus, in *Mesopotamia*, or *Hebron* a god called Iehoua: and as in these, so amongst euery sundrie people must a peculier god be adored: so that let them account of the rest to be but toyes, and trifles,

trifles, yet this cannot be but a chooke-bone, and ſcruple to their conſciences.

And as after this manner their religion is altered, ſo in like ſort their manners proue alienated, being inforced, or rather eaſily intyſed, to applie their behauiour according to the ſeuerall places of their preſent aboade: in *Perſia* to reuell in brauerie, elſe no man for their companie: in *Scythia* to liue euer begerly, elſe to proude for their ſocietie: in *Arabia* to followe Venerie, elſe excluded their familiaritie: to be ſhort, in *Parthia* they muſt vomit with drinking, in *Thratia* liue by filchinge, in *Lydia* practiſe gaming, in *Sibaria* ſleepe and idlenes, in *Caſpia* crueltie and diſſembling, &c. Neither is it an eaſie matter to pacifie their natiue gods (to ſuch an extraordinarie care when it chanceth) whoſe worſhipping they haue thus eſtraunged, or to leaue thoſe vices which with ſuch facilitie they haue learned: but rather it is to be doubted, that by the firſt they ſhall bee vnwillinglie caſt behinde, whileſt by the latter they are willingly ouertaken: for vanitie which is ſought for ſo eagerly, is not ſhaken off ſo eaſilie, ver. ue ſeeming painefull, and therefore reiected euen in the bloome, but vice pleaſant, and therefore affected euen in the fruit.

Neither are theſe all the euils that growe by ſuch trauels, for whereas this vnaduiſed Venterer did traffique abroade by way of exchange, he retayleth at home for reddie coine, naie of a Chapmã he becommeth a Marchaunt, and in his owne countrie vſeth outlandiſh vtterance, there to make returne of his far-fetched vices: And as one rottẽ ſheepe infecteth be it neuer ſo great a flocke, ſo one new-fangled Traueler impoiſoneth, be it neuer ſo many folke: and therefore it followeth, that ſuch traueling is harmefull to the Traueler him ſelfe, hurtful to others, and

Cap. 15.

AND qd. the maister intercepting his wordes, wee haue enough and to much of your ands and yfs, vnlesse marshalled after a better order: why howe nowe Belopares (so was his name) hast thou thy selfe confessed that the gallie saued thee from the gallowes, and yet wilt thou deliuer so badly of sea-farers? art thou a sayler, and yet of saylers a scorner? and doe the seas bring thee thy liuing, and the same also breede thy misliking? trust me hadst thou hidden thy base petigree, yet shoulde we haue conceiued in our mindes, what wee had not receiued in our eares, thy grosse error is much, but thine vnseemely termes more then thine errror.

THou oughtest (Bellopares) to obserue, that as men are borne vnder diuerse plannets, so are they of diuerse dispositions, not all (ywis) tender harted Venerians, nor slowbacked Saturnists, but some are valiant minded Iouialists, & others wise imprising Mercurialists, &c. who with their vallour can make ech climate their contrie, or with their wisedom shift warely in euerie companie, or else (if ỳ worse fall) conquer crosse fortune with Magnanimitie.

THou sayest they leaue great felicitie at home, and commit them selues to much miserie abroade, reckoning that for a folly, which in deede is a rare vertue, for what greater vertue, then to dispise inchaunting pleasures, I meane pompe and riches the nurses of sensualitie, which be either got by wrong, spent by ryot, kept with care, consumed by enuie, or lost by casualties: so ỳ (if comparison should be made) I might proue that the seas are not more displeasing for perils, then the land perilous for pleasures, to attain, & maintain which pleasures what mischiefes may be numbred, that are not there attẽpted? Men there for the most parte, are either idle and so vtterly vnprofitable, or else neither idle, nor yet well occupied: some fall to banquets with the appurtenaunces, & some

some to bickering with the inconueniences, one blazeth the borrowed beautie of some Circeis, another defourmeth himselfe with fashions: the Usurer he fleeceth, if not fleaeth the gentleman: the gentleman he racketh, if not ouerreacheth the farmer: the farmer he hourdeth, and so boysteth the markets: euery man shifteth for one, and that one sitteth on the skirts of some other, and himselfe in his own light: in fewe, the court wanteth not flatterers, nor the citie extortioners, the Priests auarice, nor the Laitie Ambition, the barres plaintes, nor the benches delayes, temples Non-residents, nor Theatres superattendants, schooles sectes, nor lawes quillits, Hermaphrodits maintenance, nor Soldiours immunity, good men maligners, nor ill men bolsterers, Cormerãts crueltie nor Beggars impatience, the richy mallice, nor the poore miserie, Brothels ribalds, nor Prisons offcõers, the Diuell worke, nor the Gallowes vse, and yet for breuitie I omit a milion of mischiefes, whereof in the end, to their own preiudice, the Actors only feele the accidents.

Because therefore that Beautie bewitcheth none, but her busie inspectors, Couitousnes catcheth none, but such as are hopled with goldẽ fetters, Gluttonie entertaineth none but currant guests to his banquets, nor Pride pranketh vp any but intruding courtiers, seing (I say) that by following the tract, we fall into the trappe, and by senting the bait we swallow the bayne, haue not those (think you) reason? are not they happy? nay are not they to bee honoured? that eschewing these mollifying instigations to vanitie, and ensuing mortifying contemplations to eternitie, loth such securitie in braue cities and beautifull palaces, and like better a life solitarie, amidst the rough seas and wrestling surges: where their faire fingers are not (as occasion serueth) priuileged the foule cables, so that their hands being exercised with labours, their thoughts be not enueigled with vole fantasies: and the rather for that opportunitie being taken awaye, no hope remaineth

here to practise, what vainly they might purpose: but on the Seas, in a calme they vse mirth with modestie, in a storme they pray patiently, and at all times liue as if they should die hourely: and if any perill happen, then such perill (say I) prepareth Saints to Heauen, whereas pleasures (feele some) procure soules to hell.

And yet (Belopares) let vs not aggrauate the daunger otherwise then the case requireth, for as I cannot denye but that perils happen here sometime, so (if I shall speake no more then troth) I must say they chaunce but seldom, for which of vs three, that haue bene sailers almost al our dayes, cannot alredie assure our selues to die loden with as many white heares, as commonlye the oldest Citizen that dieth, not so much as hauing vewed the Seas.

Thou also giuest out, that they must worship new gods, and forsake their old religion, but I say that wise trauailers passe by safe-conduct, & amongst their league friends, are from those matters exempted, either keeping aloofe from where they doubt in these things to be sifted, or else being there rashly or violently arriued, matters maye bee auoided with such discretion, that without preiudice to their gods, or offence to their owne consciences, they may reuerently pray in a strange temple, to their known god whose altars are absent, and yet doe no reuerence at all to the vnknown god whose Image is present: for though there be necessitie that they kneele by the shrine, yet is it not necessarie that they kisse the Saint: in zeale, not in shewe consisteth deuotion, and a speedye returne is in suche case the surest resistaunce: or if sifted beyond godsforbod, then a godlye martyrdome is a glorious enlargement.

And not in this only hast thou shot wide, but in the rest also missed the white, that is, in iudging so of trauelers, I say not Land-leapers (wherof in deede, there are not a few, which leaue their countrey, not for the number of vices which there abound, but for the misliking of a fewe vertues

vertues, whiche they are neyther willing nor able to o-baye, such as sucke corruption as fast from the vitious, as the Toade poyson from the earth) but I meane, thou art to bee controuled, in iudging so absurdlye of men betaking themselues to painfull trauels, eyther by their prowes and actiuitie (wanting the like occasion at home) to purchase renowne: by their skill, and venter to discouer obscure people, and places beneficiall to themselues, and commodious to their countries, or else vppon any other good, or the same intentions before remembered: yea were it no more, then to get experience, learne languages, or to auoyde idlenesse: for suche as are these men, doe not peize their prosperitie by the quantitie of the externall pleasures they forgo, but by the qualitie of the eternall vertues they pursue.

As for the sundry vices frequented in those countreys, by thee seuerally named, my aunswere is, that out of bitter shelles we haue sweete kernels, that in one and the same place, are bad presidents both of vice and vertue, and one and the same man may be holpen or hindered by eyther example: the well disposed Trauailer doth learn to immitate in the good their commendable qualities, and to abhorre in the badd their condemnable maners, applying both presidents, good, & bad, to one vertuous purpose.

More might I say (Belopares) and more would I say, were it not that I know the lawdable thing to be of sufficiency ynough, not only to contend, but also to defend it self, against al vituperating detractions whatsoeuer: and therfore I conclude, Such a Trauailer is wel aduised at his going out, well amended at his returning home, profitable to himself, not preiudicial to others, but well meriting of all.

Nay, qd. the Pilot (vndertaking to bee a tickler in the strife) no more of this matter, ynough is as good as a feast, and too much of one thing, is good for nothing: here is a businesse (in deede) as if all the Seas were

nothing

nothing but ſwallowing whirlepooles, and all the ſhoare nothing but conſuming whirlewinds.

But might I moderate your contention, you ſhoulde deuide this ſentence betwixt you, that neither ſea nor ſhoare are leſſe perilous the one than the other, and yet neyther of both dampnifying farther than is permitted by ineuitable Deſtinie, or more truly the Giuer & Guider of deſtinies, who hauing made both land, ſeas, and all therein, and with them vs, hath (no doubte) reſerued to himſelfe ỳ prerogatiue of a Creator, ouer his creatures, to diſpoſe of all things after his owne pleaſure: neither do I thinke there is any neceſſitie that the trauailer, or any other violently become vitious, except the ſame volentarily deſiſt to be vertuous.

Neuertheleſſe I dare not be curious in theſe contingents, that cannot yield any abſolute reaſon of the members, motions, and ſences which I dayly carrie about me in mine own body, neither yet of thinges inferiour to my ſelf, as why the Adamant drayeth yron, and letteth lie a Feather, with a thouſand ſuch like: only let it ſuffiſe that we receiue, and receauing, let vs be thankfull to the gods that are the giuers, and wholy to their ſignificat and ſecrete willes referre all our actions: leaſt by being ouercurious, from the Moone we fal into the mire, and not only looſe our labour, but for preſumption be puniſhed with Prometheus. It ſhall be leſſe neceſſarie that wee bee well learned, then that we haue well liued, and he knoweth ynough, that knoweth himſelf not to know any thing: and therefore (balking ſuch labyrinths) ſuffer me, I pray you, to cut of your arguments with a familiar example or two not much impertinent to this your preſent controuerſie, whereof I my ſelfe haue bene no ſmall part, and wherein (perhaps) mine experience may more preuaile then al your arguments.

Cap.

Belopares.

Cap. 16.

WHilſte I was yet a lad and kepte in *India* with my father, I chanced to wander into a great deſart not far from home, where childiſhly colting vp and downe, on a ſudden a terrible Lioneſſe had caught mee betwixte her pawes: well might I crie out for helpe, but not any creature was in way to heare.

The Lyoneſſe hauing whelpes in a denne, not farre from the place where ſhe had thus founde me, & minding (belike) to haue made a merie banquet amongſt her yong diuels, hayled mee apace with her churliſhe Clawes, (wherewithall ſhe pinched me ſhrewdly) towards her denne.

But ſee the chaunce, an other fierce Lyoneſſe happened to range that way, who meeting betwixt that and home, with my boiſtrous hoſteſſe and me her bloody gueſt, preſuming at the leaſt wiſe to be a partner, if not a ſole poſſeſſor of ſo delicate a booty, began to catch at my taile, thinking ſo by main force to haue recouered me out of the others clawes: but my firſte Cuſtomer loth to forgo her cariage, one while ſtanding vpon me, and an other while trauerſing rounde about me, reſcued me a long time by that meanes.

In the end eyther of them being ſo much the more eager, by how much they both ſuffered for foode, began ſo fiercely to aſſaile eche other, that through earneſtneſſe of fighting, they had withdrawne themſelues from me, a great diſtaunce of grounde: I ſeeing that, and (as yong as I was, not letting ſlip that aduantage, feare making me forget how pitifully I was wounded) did ſtart vp in a triſe, and was gone in a turne, neuer daring to looke behind mee, vntill I had gotten my Fathers houſe ouer myne head, leauing the two Lyons miſerably tugging and tearing one an other, eyther of them purpoſing to

haue deuoured me, whilſt I (thankefully be it ſpoken) had thus happily deceaued them both: of which hard eſcape, theſe ſcarres (he ſhewed them ſcarres) will be during my life, mindfull tokens.

Thus haue you heard how ſtrangely my life was preſerued on the land, and now ſhall you heare how miraculouſly I eſcaped death on the ſeas.

Cap. 17.

THe firſt, and the worſt voyage that euer I made was into *Cicyona*, to ſhew the horrors whereof, words will rather ſeeme deficile, than matter defectiue.

Three dayes we ſayled with a fauourable winde, but on the fourth, aroſe as it were a foggie miſte from out the Seas, anon the blackneſſe of the ſkie might not be ſeene for the darkeneſſe of the ayre: dreadfull flaſhes of lightning ſeemed to haue ſyred the Seas, terrible bollies of Thunder threatned the ſhaking of ỹ heauẽs, & ſundering of the earth, ſhewres of raine poured downe, as if there ſhould haue ben a ſecond generall Inundation, the roring winds ſkuffle ſo boiſterouſly from ech corner as if Boreas, Auſter, Zephirus, and Eurus had bene at ods within themſelues, or at one againe vs: and our ſelues wretches were at our wits end, neither ſeeing for the darke, nor hearing for the dinne how any thing ſhould be amended, & yet too too well knew we that euery thing was amiſſe.

One while the ſhip mounteth ſo high, that ſcarcely we diſcerne the hollow waues from aloft, an other while it ſinketh ſo low that hardly we deſcrie the ouer-pearing Billowes from beneath, & though we did account it midday by courſe of the time, yet might we compare it to midnight by occaſion of the ſtorme: what ſhall I ſay? not one of vs knew what to do, and yet euery man was doing ſomething: one plieth the pompe vntill for wearineſſe he fainteth, another laboreth out water vntill for weakeneſſe he

he falleth, this mã (in vaine) repaireth the cracking tacklings, that man (at an aduenture) rēteth down the sailes, some poure forth their prayers, some vnpatiently torment their own persons, and some vow sweete insence and oblations, the married man he giueth a pitifull farewell to his absent wife and children, the batcheler nameth his parēts, friends, & whom he best loueth, here stādeth one fast clinging to a loose boord, there another cleane stripped to abide his chance, and euery mā disorderly did that thing, whereunto the extremitie of his passion did presently direct him.

Diuers daies together were we thus continally tossed, hauing by chaunce, sea-roome at will, but at the last our ship being driuen perforce vpon a shallow, stacke so fast that the only helpe remaining was to vnballance it: the Gold, Jewels, pretious stuffe and Treasure then cast into the Seas, as it was much, so was it not to be valued: but to tell you to whome the same appertained, and to what vse they should haue bene implo yed, requireth euer long a discourse for this time, the which hereafter at the like leasure you shall also vnderstand.

Unvaluable (as I sayd) was the Treasure then floung ouer-boord, more than sufficient to haue ransomed a king from the captiuitie of his foes, but nothing at all helping to redeeme vs from the crueltie of the Seas: yet mighte we haue gotten our ship afloate with that cost, we should haue thought our selues to haue wone by our losse: but (alas) that not sufficing, we were also constrained to cast ouer-boord our prouigion of victuals: and so getting at length into the deepe, our ship that now wanted her full Ballace, was a freshe in farre worser sorte than before, tossed amongste the Waues with the blustring Tempest: the whiche was so extreme, and lasted so long, that (in effect) wee rested vtterly hopeless euer to attaine lande: & the rather, for that through fasting and feeblenes, we had small vse or none at all of our fainting limmes:

yet life being a sweete thing, and hunger a sharpe sauce, we fead vpon whatsoeuer beast we then found aboord: and afterwards the pitch from the cables, the leather from our shoes, yea more homlier matters than I may reuerently speake of, we made food for our pining carcases: but these also decayed, the storme continued, & famine increased.

What might we now do? foode we had none, yet likely to famish: labour we could not, yet resting should perish: die we might not, yet liuing did languish: neuer were men wrapped in more miserie, or distressed so vnmeasurably. This (alas) is greeuous ynough that you haue heard, but harder was our hap than thus.

Whilst we stoode rufully gazing one vppon an other, more like to ghosts departed, than men liuing, our good Generall Menophis, a noble Duke and victorious Captain, vnder whose fortunate conduct we had diuers times before preuailed in many a hot Encounter, being now sent of an vnhappie Embassage frō *India* into *Scyona*, looking as ghost-like as any other, and supporting his weake body with a shorte Iauilin pight in the middle of the Hatches, spake to vs as followeth.

Cap. 18.

WEre it so (my euermore courageous, but now comfortlesse companiōs) that we once again were in ỳ champion fields of *India*, enclosed with the warlike bands of Semiramis though fiue times doubled, yet would I put you in hope either to march after them in a second pursuite, or at the least to make from them the first escape: but (alas) small is the councel that I am now able to giue, yet somwhat the comfort that therby you may gaine, but no conquest at al is here to be got, knowing that to increate, or threaten the churlish surges, were more than Follie.

Onely giue me leaue in this my last, I say my last and vnaccustomed exhortation, to preuaile, and then assure

your

pour ſelues, that if this aged carcaſe of mine ſufficiently inſtructed not to feare death, to be ſolue into perpetuall bondage, or to ſuffer death it ſelfe might be in ought auaileable to you, I would account ſuch bondage a freedome, and ſuch death a flea-biting: for how I haue bene, & am affectioned towards you, may well appeare in this, that I a Duke by birth, and your Generall by aſſignmẽt, was notwithſtanding the firſt, before the meaneſt here that did want to eate, & not the laſt of this company that did feele the famine: and yet were you eaſed of this miſerie, I ſhould not be impatient of much more ſorrowe.

Liſten therefore I ſay, how I your careful Captaine, not occaſioned nowe (as often times heretofore) to inſtruct you how and in what manner you ought to fight, am at this time (after a far differing ſort) to admoniſhe you, how and in what manner you are to die.

It either needes not, or bootes not, to be offended with Fortune, that can be no other then mutable by name and nature, neither is Fortune, whom it pleaſeth the irreligious people to intitle a blinde Goddeſſe, any other in deede, then a by-name drawne from the Originals, and Euents of our mortall actions: but it is the vndoubted gods thẽſelues whom we haue by ſome meanes vnaduiſedly offended, it is they that puniſh, and them muſt we pacifie, as thoſe of whoſe aide we ſhould neuer diſpaire: for though perſecution procureth a death to the bodie, yet a conſcience diſpairing aſſureth death to the ſoule: miſerable is diſtreſſe, more miſerable diſtruſt, but moſt miſerable then to feare, when we cannot hope.

Neuertheleſſe, let vs not make our caſe ſo deſperate, but that (whatſoeuer ſhall betyde vs, life or death) we laie hold-faſt on patience, the onely touch-ſtone of vertue, being pleaſure vnto paine, comfort to correction, wealth vnto want, and death vnto death, vanquiſhing altogether with ſuffring and not with ſtriuing, then which is nothing more victorious, no not death it ſelfe: for who are

those that death conquereth: euen such fooles as dreade him, and vnto whom the onely remembraunce of death is an horrour, such (I say) as willingly become Ghostes, whilst they feare their graues, fearing more in sence then they may feele in substance, and not thinking their paine will be either not great, or not long.

What should be the cause, that men hauing Nature their vndoubted Author, Reason their assured Instructor, & Experience their continuall Perswader, should neuertheles or euer death commeth, little better then die through the onely feare they conceiue of death? vules doting to much on their wealth, which they are loth to leaue, or else hoping to little of the mercifull gods, who then forgiue an ill life, when they find a good ende: with whom it shalbe neuer to late too shake hãds, as esteeming whatsoeuer is done wel enough, to be done soone ynough.

Yea the rather (my louing companions) haue we no cause to dreade death, or wish life, that are to die at the appointment of the gods, and not by the iudgement of men: for to the Person worthely condemned, death is a double death, it being farre more miserable to deserue it, then to suffer it: and yet though it be in the power of men, to iudge men, (which I also thinke to happen but at sufferance of the gods) Nature doth assure death vnto al, not graunting to any one his life by pattent, but at pleasure: and that in such sorte, that not the wysest man lyuing can say, there, then, or thus I shall die, and yet sure he is that die he shall.

Seeing therefore (my good friendes) that death is so certaine, as nothing more sure, and the order of his comming so vnsure, as nothing lesse certaine, and that an honest death is the goale of our liues, howe happie are we (if we could conceiue of our happinesse) that shall die with such fauourable opportunitie of repentance? well deseruing of our countrie, lamented for of our friendes, not laughed at of our fooes, yea then when life is yrke-

not

some vnto vs: & that not on Jeobets, as do Malefactors: not in Prisons, as doe Captiues: not in Corners, as doe Cowardes: not in Quarrels, as doe Cutters: not in Chaines, in our enemies Triumphes: neither yet suddenly, then which no death is more dreadfull: but in a ship which doth argue vs venterous: in the Seas, not to be subdued by Cõquerours: in our Prince his affaires, as loyall subiectes: with famine, which confounded Mõsters: with fame of former prowesse, and by prayer, which shall reuiue vs.

What can we wish more of the gods, or what should I say more to you, whose deliuerie is not desperat, but enẽ to sence vnpossible, and vnto whom (sorlorne Soules) death the ende of all wretchednesse, ought especialy to be welcome? Certes no more remaineth, but to intreate you (whom henceforth I shall neuer more exhort) to be patient without grudging, penitent without wauering, prepared without dispayring, dying to the flesh, and liuing to your soules, yea lastly, remember I beseech you, that we are no sooner borne into the worlde, but that wee liue to die from the world, & therfore ought rather to loue whether we must necessarily, then from whence we must of necessitie. Thus not able to comfort you as I would, but willingly to counsell you as I may, no more resteth but that I wish the continuance of so grieuous a life, to haue deliueraunce by a godly death.

This said, ỹ noble Duke turneth his face, & we might perceiue how the teares trilled down his cheeks: at sight wherof, we that did alwaies reuerẽce him for his Grauity, obay him for his Authority, loue him for his Lenity, & honour him for his Liberality, could not but for cõpanie weepe.

Cap. 19.

Immediatlie as he had deliuered such his exhortation, one of our weake fellow souldiers suddenly fainteth, falleth

falleth downe and dyeth: but loe, an horrible thing (yet considering that hunger breaketh stone-walles, and necessitie suffreth no restraint at that time to be tollerated in vs) no sooner was the breath out of the miserable mã his bodie, but that stripping him out of his cloathes, like famished dogges, euerie of vs rent some one peece of his starued carcase: wherupõ we fed as of such delicate fare, that no gold might haue bought the smalest portion therof: and so pleasant seemed this vnnatural refection, that we (erwhile at point, euerie man to haue tyred vppon his owne flesh) did nowe (as crowes the carren) watch the like opportunitie in our fellowes: growing in the end generally to this concluſiõ, that ech day Lots should be cast and he vpon whom it so lighted, suffer such gentle death as him selfe would chuse, if not as we should deuise, and his bodie to be equally deuided amongst the Suruiuors: neither would Duke Menophis our good generall, bee exempted out of this deathfull Lotterie.

Diuerse dayes were past, & diuerse Martyred soules had performed this harde Compoſition: in the ende the lot fell to me, so that die I shoulde, and (in good sooth) die I would, neither did any of vs all desire to haue liued: being perswaded either to perish (and that shortly) in the drenching waues, or by this casuall crueltie, or else in the ende by famine: and (which was not the least of our griefes) who could willingly abide, to see the butchered bodies of their deare friendes, before their eyes, & whilst the flesh yet panted, to be mangled into smale gobbits, & dealt about the bloodie ship for the others to feede vpon? So that therfore, with greater patience then I now liue I then prepared to die, mine hungry companions in the meane while, as eagarly whetting their stomackes on their teath.

Being almost at point to haue giuen my watchworde, to him, that standing at my backe, should haue smitten of mine head, euen at that verie instant, a mightie Byllowe

mounting

mounting vp into the ship, had almost ouercouered the hatches with water, so that the whole companie (the ship being now in great danger) were faine to leaue me at my prayers, and I also to leaue praying, and all at once to fall to their businesse.

In which meane time, a dapper Lad of mine, and as louing a boy as might serue any mā, perceiuing ẏ stormе somewhat to decrease, and the thicke clowdes beginning to breake, had (of his owne accord) clymed the Mast, frō whence, or euer breathing time serued againe to haue saine in hād with me, the finishing of whose life they purposed to haue made their next worke, the boy suddenly crieth: Land, land, land, reioyse my hearties I discrie Land: but hearing such newes it was needelesse to bid vs reioise, in my purse I had a round summe which I gaue ẏ boy for his tidings, & eth of vs rewarded him bountifully.

By this time were the Seas iolyly calme, & the skyes perfitly cleare, wherefore (as it stoode vs vpon) taking time whilest time serued, and as well as we might supplying our brooken tacklings, we tar'd the shirtes from of our backes, to patch vp our ragged sayles, and clapping on as manie as our ship might beare, a merry winde (contrary to al hope) did shortly bring vs a shoare: though not in the same place where we shoulde haue arriued, yet in such a place wheras we were cōfortably releeued. Thus as you may see, Land, Seas, & our selues are subiect to one and the same God, and not to Chaunce.

The three sorrowfull watchmen, sorrowfull I say because not a litle grecued at the absence of the two brethren, hauing with this & such like talke driuen out the night, when the morning Starre had a prittie while appeared, brake vp their watch: and anon Atys and Abynados hallow frō the shoare, who being made out vnto with the Boate were merily receiued aboorde: Where report of new matters was diuerslỹ handled, & occasion of more straung aduentures (as orderly doth follow) was offred.

Pheone.

Calamus quartus.

Cap. 20.

HAuing thus brought Atys, and Abinados from the Castle to the ship, being brauely vnder saile, well surtheed with a smooth dãgerles Sea, & a gentle whistling wind: & when the two brethren had recounted al they had seene, & the three watchmen the effect of that they had sayed: Belopares did then challeng the Pilot of his last-nights promise, which was to declare the then propertie, and purposed imploiment of those riches, in that vnlucky viage (as before remembred) cast ouerboorde.

In deed (answered the Pilot) I assumed such a matter, & am redy to requite me of that promise, & now you shall haue it as my selfe did receiue it, aswell from the eye as the eare, and thus it was.

In the beginning of King Selchim his raigne, chanced great warres betweene him & the *Indians*, but in the ende Selchim preuailing, receiued in hostage Staurobates the King of *India* his only son: this lustie yong prince during his abode in the court of *Cyciona*, became mierly enamored on Pheone, a gallant & beautifull Lady, & sister to King Selchim: who also with equall loue, subiected her libertie to his liking.

When this sweete passion long time, had mutually increased

creased betwixt them, & ỳ it was certified to Staurobates, ỳ his father was dead, & that the *Indians* attended his comming & Coronation: Staurobates did both easily obtaine a returne into his countrie, and withall King Selchim his glad consent, to match with Pheone.

But the yong Louers not esteeming it sufficient, solemnly to haue plighted their faithes ech to other, did also secretly bind vp ỳ bargaine, with a nights lodging: either of both then seuerally receiuing, and deliuering two such Pawnes, as neither of both might after possibly redeeme.

Now when loue had caused Staurobates long to linger in *Cicyona*, and that his vrgent affaires called him fast away, he sorrowfully taking his leaue of Pheone, departed with this promise, that before a certaine time (soone after following) were expired, he would sende shippes to waffe her into *India*: vowing that nothing except death, should hinder that his resolution, no nor death it selfe, but that by the time prefixed, newes of such hinderance should be returned: & so taking her a Iewel from off his finger, & whispering certaine wordes in her eare he tooke ship, the one gasing towards the shoare, & the other after the sayles, so long as shoare or sayles might be discried.

Staurobates at his home comming, found his country inuaded by ỳ armipotent Virago *Semiramis*, whom (which neuer hapned her else-where) he incountred, wounded, & lastly chased her mighty troupes frõ out his Territories. wholy deliuering himselfe in a short time of ỳ *Assirians*.

Scarcely was the armour cold from of his backe, and the Scepter warme in his hãd, but that (remembring his promise) he dispatched the before named Duke Menophis to *Cicyona*, from thence to safe cõduct his betrothed Lady: sending by him great store of treasure, part whereof presents for King Selchim, part gifts for diuerse of his Nobility, & the residue for the honorable furnishing of Pheone.

But by that time the warres at home were appeased, and (as you haue heard) our daungerous sailing auoided,

and after so long famishment and bad diet, our selues in health and strength recouered, the time before appointed on was expired, and yet of all this while Pheone hearde no tidings from Staurobates: whereseuer supposing ỳ he had ben vnmindful of his promise, or at ỳ least purposed to giue her the slip, it is said, she fel into these Exclamatiõs.

Cap. 21.

AND is there no remedy vnfortunate, foolish, & forsaken wench but that thou must answere so deere an interest, for the cheape loue of his so momentarie loue? must it follow of necessity, because thou wert credulẽt, that he therfore must be inconstant? is such the euent of his lamẽtable lookes, smooth words, and often othes? ah Staurobates, Staurobates, who would haue thought so youthfull a Leacher, could haue counterfaited so artificially a Louer? but I perceiue (alas, to late I perceiue) that men make not their false hearts priuie to that which their faire tongues seeme rufully to pleade: & therfore nature hath left our weake sex in most wretched condition, suffring vs ouer-feruently to loue, and giuing it to men euen kindly to chaung, making vs as wyers for their wrekking, warre for their working, and fooles for their flouting.

Howbeit before they obtaine, then we, who but we, & onely we are Idols worthy their sacrifices: they plie vs with pitifull epistles, they prouoke vs with premeditated eloquence, they attyre them by the booke, & speake not but in print: what haue we they praise not? nay, what lacke we praise-worthy they faine not? why our gloues, yea our slippers, nay the verie earth whereuppon we then tread hath (say they) vertue, or else (know we) they flatter: a simple kisse on our hãds, is thẽ restoritiue to ther harts: but (good gods) for a louers fee at our lips, they daunce in the Aire, they cast down their Gauntlets, they couch their Speares, they spur their Steedes, they enter ỳ Lists, yea

we

we rather want wherein to imploy their labours, than they in what to please their Ladies. But, Dissemblers, though they leuel at our parts, they shoot at our portiõs.

And be it so that they preuaile, then whether they loue still as doe a few, a little as doe many, or not at all as doe most, what other reckoning can we cast-aways make: but that the first day of their recouery, is ỳ last date of our libertie: that the ielous eyes of the hote louer shall be ouer attendant, the emperious mind of the luke-warme ask too much attendaunce, and the third sort (hauing deceaued) shall leaue vs to our Cares, as Rauens hauing disclosed. do their young to the Aire: sauing that Rauens after a while returne as reuoked by loue, where these would neuer retaine vs at all, if not resisted by law. Thus play they Fores, and we proue flattered: they Scorpions, and we stinged: they Diuels, and we tempted: but who worser than thou Staurobates? and yet wert thou present (changing Churle) I know thou couldst aleage no cause of such strangenesse, nor I for any crime of mine (except perhaps for trusting thee too much) be iustly chalenged: as for my beautie, had it bene somtimes baser, my fortune had bene at this time farre better. Ah Pheone, desolate Pheone, how mayst thou wind thy selfe out of these euils, or finde redresse for such iniuries? complaine to thy brother: why, admit by warre he enforce Staurobates to wed thee: yet no war can enforse Staurobates to loue thee, and then much better martired, so then maried: & shouldst thou resolue (which thine ouermuch folly will not suffer) to accept his disloialtie as an acquittance of all loue, yet so deepe is he in thine hart, that for his losse thou couldst not but languish: and more than so (and too much by so much) who then should father the fruit of thy growing wombe: but only Staurobates, whome thou rash wanton, ouer credulent of vowes, didst entertain simply as an husband, but not, as the heauens can witnesse, willingly as an adulterer: howbeit through this thy beastly foolishnesse, were

the crime apparant, as it may not be here concealed, my ſelfe am ſhamed, mine Honour ſtained, and my death in law deſerued.

What doth it (alas) aduauntage me now, to haue ben Daughter to the famous King Aegialeus? the Siſter of Selchim, or that my beautie, education, and entertainment haue heretofore allured mightie Kinges Wooers, worthy perſonages Suters, and the Worlde wonderers: that muſt now liue obſcurely (the Gods wot where, and how poorely) the moſt wretched Relict of ſo notorious a Diſſembler, or elſe die a ſhamefull death for my violated chaſtitie: O well had I bene if happily interred, or at leaſt wiſe, by ſo infamous an Epitaph not ſuruiued.

But what beate I the ayre with ſucceſſeſſe wordes: Why doe I not rather conuay my ſelfe into *India*, where (perhaps) when I ſhall manifeſt vnto Staurobates the diſtreſſe wherein I am here left, when I ſhall humbly proſtrate my ſelfe at his feete, whome I neuer wittingly offended, when he ſhall beholde the teares continually guſhing from out thoſe eyes which once he loued, when my tongue ſhall diſcourſe a lamentable tale, and my ſorrowfull geſtures affirme the ſame to be credible, when I ſhal charge him with his promiſes and vowes, and laſtly, whē I ſhall diſcloſe (my follie, but his fault) my great belly, Then (whiche I ſhall account amends for all wronges) Loue, Pitie, Feare, or Shame ſhall againe winne, for whom I now wiſh.

But (foole) what wordes are theſe: wilte thou herein alſo bewray thine error? troth it is (Pheone) the gods accept the humble complaints of oppreſſed ſoules, but Staurobates not therefore will conferre with poore Suters: the Gods be mercifull, but he maieſtical, and ouer-proud a Phiſition to miniſter vnto ſo meane a Patient: doth he not now diſdaine of thee that art his equall? and ſhall he not then as a Runagate forbid thee his preſence, as franticke commaund thee to ſcilence, as offenſiue enioyne thee

thee punishment, or as comberſome adiudge thee death? O ſuccourleſſe eſtate of mine. O woorlde not loued but for my wombe, and it the Mappe of al my ſorrowes, for which neuertheleſſe and not elſe I yet liue, as expecting a comfortable childe, in place of ſo vnconſtant a Father. And yet, Staurobates, thou canſt not worke to Pheone ſuch ill, but that Pheone wiſheth vnto thee ſo well as not for her greateſt wrongs, to craue the meaneſt reuēge, yea (to pleaſure thee yet more) as my loue is alreadie remote frō thine heart, ſo of my perſon I henceforth deliuer thine eyes: O vnkinde Staurobates, ah vnhalowed Pheone.

With ſuch like paſſions as theſe being tormented with ieloſie, though in deede not threatned any ſuch iceberdie, did Pheone a while driue forth the time: vntil in the end, not able any longer to hide that ſwelling ſickneſſe, which ſhe knew to be other than a Tympany, one morning betimes, ſhe ſecretly windeth her ſelfe from out the Court in diſguiſed apparel, not to be recouered by any ſearche, or heard of by any inquirie.

After which her departure, within leſſe than a ſeuennight Duke Menophis and we arriue at *Cicyona*: but intelligence being there had of this euill newes, making ſhort tariance there, we reſaile (with ſorrow ynough) to *India* and certifie to Staurobates our euill aduentures on the ſeas, with the heauie tidings of Pheone her miſſing.

Staurobates, who had pitifully heard the report of our miſhaps, and tooke moſt patiently the loſſe of his ſo great treaſure, hearing now ſuch newes of her whom he loued as his own life, fetching pitifull ſighes, and eftſoones falling into perilous ſownes, could hardly be reuiued, wanting little but that he had preſently died: and long after, remained at point vtterly to haue forſworne wiuing, by reaſon that Fortune had euen then ſo awkly annihilated his Commencing, whē hauing already his Grace, he accounted himſelfe a Graduate.

Cap.

Pheone.

Cap. 22.

BUt what is it that time doth not determine, or at leaſt wiſe diminiſh? diuers yeares after (he yet continuing a broken batchiler) when his penſiuenes was growen from a wound to a ſkarre, he ariued at *Cicyona*, there familiarly to viſite his old friend, and brother in law that might haue bene King Selchim, who gladly gaue him entertainment anſwerable to his magnificence.

During the time of Staurobates his now abode in *Cicyona*, Marpiſſa King Selchim his only daughter and heire, a perfit bloſſome of beautie, a matchleſſe Paragõ for perſonage, perfected by Nature, and pulliſhed by Nurture, and one whome Enuie it ſelfe could not in any wiſe impeach, occcupied ſo great a portion of now more hers than his own hart, that Pheone was thẽ diſeaſed, but Marpiſſa ſeazed, the Aunt diſmiſſed, but the Niece admitted, the one lacked, but the other loued.

Staurobates therefore, firſte mouing Selchim of this match, and there preuailing, did ſecondlye make loue to Marpiſſa, but there fayled: howbeit like a wilie wenche, ſhe finely ſmootheth him off with ſuch delatorie anſwers, that cunningly ſhe leaueth her ſelfe at liberty, and giueth to him neuertheleſſe cauſe to play on the bridle, for hee aſſured himſelfe of nothing more, than that he had gotten a wife, when ſhe perſwaded herſelfe of nothing leſſe, then to take him for husband.

There was at that time in the Court, attendaunt vpon a young Duke, which Duke had bene, in vaine, a long ſuter to the Princeſſe, one Criſippus, knowne to be no other than a ritche Marchants ſonne of the ſame Citie where the Court than lay, but yet a youthful Gallant, and a braue Courtier: he at the commaundement, and in the behalfe of the Duke his maiſter, vſed often repaire to Marpiſſa, and had much conference with her as touching the

ſame

ſame Duke his loue. But thee careleſſye neglecting the curteous proffers of the maſter, did contemplatiuelye reſpect the comly perſonage of the man, who being ſcarcely xviii. winters old, both for actiuitie, maners, and well making, was (at ẏ leaſt wiſe in her eye) not ſecond to any.

This Criſippus, I ſay, this affianſed factor, & fauoured Soliciter, was the only ſleping Endimion ſecretly kiſſed of Phœbe, & (ſo far forth as her loue wanting a ſecond conſent, might extend it ſelfe) to Galatea an Acis, to Venus an Adonis, and to Marpiſſa the firſt of her loue, or the laſt of her life. Wherfore after that ſhe had with earneſt & long endeuour ſought to reſiſt vndeſiſtable loue, at the length taking courage boldly to perſiſt, ſhe entreth with her ſelf into theſe Arguments: What reaſon haſt thou (Marpiſſa) to contend with Loue, that is both reſtleſſe and vnreaſonable, adding ſo to fire fewell? or what ſtandeſt thou vppon theſe ouer curious points, thy fathers diſpleaſure, Criſippus his Pettigree, or thine own Nobleſſe: when the firſt may be pacified, or elſe by meanes auoided, for from whom we are deriued by birth, to thē what can we more returne than reuerent mindes: but to whome wee are driuen by loue, from thē what may we leſſe with-hold than our own parſōs? yea Marpiſſa thou maiſt alſo reuerēce as a daughter, and loue as a wife, and yet the later not preiudicial to the firſt. Secondly, and as concerning Criſippus his Pettigree, or Nouertie, what is that to be reſpected: ſeeing thou doeſt delight in his parſonage, not deſcant of his parentage, whoſe vertue doth counteruaile the want of Nobilitie: for better the man lacking wealth, then wealth lacking the man. Thirdly, what ſhouldeſt thou bee more nise than wiſe: that art therefore to be pardoned becauſe in loue, and who is ignorant that loue reſpecteth no perſons? for howſoeuer in all other things hapneth a ſuperiority, yet Nature that hath giuen to vs al one Birth, one Breath, and one Death, in this one only thing remaineth vncorrupt, and is to all alike indifferent, making Phœbus

a Sheapheard, and Hercules a Cot-queane: but admit the Diſcord, yet mariage maketh the Concord.

Mariage (qd. I) yea but all the craft in catching, and cunning in keeping: I marie Marpiſſa, this was ſweetly ſpoken if faire words might win him, but Criſippus is no Pigeon to be taken with a beane, nor a child to be intiſed with a Ball, he may be perhaps a Louer, but not loue for loſſe, and will more eſteeme a dowrie that is bountifull, than a Kings Daughter though beautifull. Alas Marpiſſa, what dowrie canſt thou bring him? Ah, Death, if he be taken: Baniſhment, if he eſcape: and Pouertie, howſoeuer he ſpeedeth? Wherfore if thou wilt loue him, then leaue to loue him, but that (alas) will neuer be, except thou alſo leaue to liue. May, rather moue the queſtion, and afterwards diſpoſe of thy ſelfe according to his anſwere: they are more than miſerable, that ſeeke a ſword to periſh on the point, before a ſalue to applie to their paine: the wered perſon that in moſt anguiſh, crieth out to be deliuered of greefe, the ſame would not with the leaſt violence, be then diſpatched of life: ſpeake Marpiſſa nowe, or elſe neuer ſpeede, ſue to him for loue, that perhaps would, but feares to attempt thee in the like: thou ſhalt, no doubt, obtaine, he is neither diſcurteous, nor timerous, & ſo conſtāt a Partner ſhal the rather make him venterous of the perill.

Cap. 23.

Lupus in fabula, labouring yet in theſe paſſions, ſhe perceaued Criſippus daunting attendance, about the purſute of the Duke his loue: whom (more for that ſhee had now a new plea of her own to plie, than vpon any will to beare the olde pleaded cauſe of his maiſter, the whiche ſhe had already both in thought, & by word diſmiſſed) ſhe calleth into a withdrawing chamber, where giuing him intertainment more than vſuall, but yet no more than ſtood with modeſtie, they enter into this Dialogue.

Mar.

Mar. What newes Crisippus? My Lord your Master is (I hope) satisfied, and not offended, with the returne of my late aunswere: if then your hether Repaire be not his Replie, but your owne preferment, giue me leaue to intrude my self a dealer in your demaund, and doubt not of my diligence to whomsoeuer, and for whatsoeuer in your behalfe.

Cr. Neither is it possible, Madame, my Lord should be satisfyed, being so vnfortunate in your loue, or your Ladiship offensiue to him that only to you hath vowed all dutie: as for my hether Repaire, it is humbly (as before) to prosecute his Succour, whom you may presently esteeme the very Substance of sorrow: and lastly, for the recept of such your so gratious offers, vnworthie Crisippus sayeth himselfe disabled, to measure part of that thankfulnesse to your Ladiships eare, whiche without all measure, is contained in his heart.

Mar. Few thankes may serue, where benefites are so small: but Crisippus as it would not hurt me to bee more amiable, so woulde it helpe the Duke to be lesse amorous.

Cr. As touching your Ladiship I aunswere, that to a Perfection a Supplie were needlesse, but as to my Lord I say, that perswasion, or dissuasion were bootelesse: for so farre off is he from being cleare of that, which to all louers is common, that the he forceth most for you, when he heareth himselfe least fauoured of you: and yet to couple vp at the losse, would, sayth he, argue an idle Huntesman.

Mar. But to be still at losse is tedious hunting.

Cr. Yet hope of finding rebateth from suche tediousnesse.

Mar. You speake in clowdes, Crisippus, how mean you that finding?

Cr. As doth my Father finde my Mother, sometimes at boord, sometimes in bed.

Mar. A hyeefe conſtruction, but all the better for Straurobates thinking to find me ſo.

Cr. And this a bad comfort, and all the worſer for my Lord threatned to looſe you ſo.

Mar. Well, Surelyy well, I perceaue were the caſe yours, you that are for an other ſo earneſt, would bee for your ſelfe impoztunate.

Cr. What I coulde bee (Madame) that reſteth, but what I ſhould be that is euident, wiſer (my thinks) then to runne on ſo fleeueleſſe an errand, or proſecute ſo booteleſſe an action.

Mar. Yet euen now you maintained, that a man perſeuering in loue, may preuaile at the length.

Cr. Then did I argue for my Lord as a Louer, now doe I anſwere your Ladiſhip as Criſippus, who in loues May ſeeth included no end.

Mar. But in the ſame May is expected an ende: and in the Ebbe not to watche the Tyde, is to looſe the Tyde through negligence.

Cr. But in the Ebbe, ſay I, ſuche a watchman maye ſweate with heate, ſtarue with colde, or tire with tariance: only he watcheth well that findeth the tide fit for his paſſage.

Mar. If to trie the conſtancie of men we linger a while, is it not (thinke you) good policie?

Cr. Yes, if in that while, to kill me with languor you account it no bad victorie.

Mar. But ſhould women conſent lightly, their Louers would conceaue ouer lewdly.

Cr. But becauſe they are Louers, therfore ignorant that coy wenches, are, for the moſt part, cunning wantōs.

Mar. As who would ſay, when men be wilfull in loue, women muſt then be witleſſe in choiſe.

Cr. Wilfull fooles in deede, are fayre Gamſters, pitifull Soldiours, & faithful Louers, and (vnder your Ladiſhips correction bee it ſpoken) ſo wiſe in their choyſe oftentimes

oftentimes are women, that whilſt they deſire to be woed, & diſdained to be wone, it fareth with them as with Hobbyes, that turning taile to the Larke, make winge to the Dozre

Say (Criſippus) we be Hobbies, ſo you ſerue vs as Falkners, graunting vs to ſeaze, where we happen to ſouſſe: as ſweete a mozſel ywis to Iuno (had their loue ben currant) was Ixion as Iupiter, and to Ioue, Io as Iuno, and the reaſon is, loue feeleth no lacke: howbeit ſuch doinges make not to vs foz documents: you ſpeake of diſdaine, but where I pzay you, were conſtancie to anie, ſhould we bee alike curteous to all? and (yet fozſooth) if we remoue any foz comlineſſe, we anon are rebuked foz coynes: when (credit me Criſippus) in loue diuerſe thinges may diuerſly hinder, amongſt which not alwaies Obſtinacie, but ſometimes and chiefly want of Opoztunitie, foz they that bandon the ball marke not euer the Chace: my ſelfe foz example may (and perhaps doe) beare an eſpeciall liking to ſome one man, but looke not (thinke you) my parents, and friendes to like oz miſlike of the match? yes Criſippus, put caſe your ſelfe might winne me without their Conſent, yet I geſſe it would greeue you ſo doungerouſly to conclude.

Cr. Be this coynes, oz be it cõlines, ſure I am that loue it is not: foz loue ſtraineth curteſitie with friendes and parentes, ſhaketh handes with wealth and pleaſures, yea it biddeth life and all farewell, loue (if loue it be in deede) is of ſuch efficacie.

Mar. Tuſh Criſippus, you now talke of Apollo his laughter.

Cr. And why not Madam, of Apollo his loue? he with infinite others haue done the like: why my ſelfe, were I a louer would doe no leſſe: but what better pzeſident then that of my Lozde? who pzeſently is at point to perfozme fully aſmuch, oz might any thing be moze then loſſe of breath, ready alſo foz your loue to fulfil that moze.

If therfore not offending good manners, I might geſſe in ieſt, at what I wiſh in earneſt, I would leuell at my Lord to hit your Louer, that one eſpeciall man I meane ſtanding (as is partly confeſſed) ſo highly in your Ladiſhips fauour, becauſe then he, no man hath better deſerued the good happe of ſo gracious a Lot, as is the prize of your Loue.

When Marpiſſa had thus priuely felt Criſippus his pulſes, although not beating ſo amorouſly as ſhee did wiſhe, yet bringing opportunity to vtter what ſhee would, not omitting therefore ſo good an occaſion ſhe ſaith.

I cannot tell (Criſippus) whether I may thinke you Cautious in threatning kindnes where none is, credulēt, in beleeuing what at no time was, or conſtant in purſuing, what ſhall neuer be: but me-thinkes your labours alredy loſt in the Duke his behalf, might long ſince haue diſſwaded both him, & you from groping after a Shadow, as much more now, Staurobates being a Competitor, from gaping after a Subſtance: neuertheles not tyed with a dead effect you harpe ſtill to a deaffe hope.

That I may therefore remoue ſuch errors (beſides that my father no longer ago then yeaſterday laſt, promiſed me in marriage to Staurobates, which Banes alſo I meane to forbid) I ſwere by yonder Sunne, I haue bene, am, and meane to bee ſo farre off from matching with the Duke, that hence-forth I proteſt neuer more to talke with him, or with any other ſoliciting his loue: wherfore (good Criſippus) ceaſe to counſell him, or intreate me any further herein, & let him alſo ſuffer himſelfe to digeſt this, a finall anſwere.

But Criſippus, although ſilēce (may you perhaps think) would be more ſeemely in a Maiden, yet becauſe I am vrged by loue violently, by your demaunde willingly, and by poſting occaſion of neceſſitie, to direct you as it were by the hand to my heart, I will not in danger be daintie: but reueale to you the man, ſaide to haue ſubdued my li-

bertie

berty. What should I more say? nay what might I with modesty lesse say, or at the least, suffer you to aime before I name? thē ẏ (here teares drowning her words, gaue a short pause to this ẏ foloweth (thy selfe) my deare Crisippus art that one whō I long time haue loued, do loue, & wil loue.

And if this thing seemeth ambiguous for likly-hoode, or strange for loue, then for further triall commaunde me, yea presently commaund me, for that the shortnes of the time promising an ouer-speedy marriage betwixt Staurobates, & me can suffer no long delay, to disrobe my selfe of this rich attire, & so disguised to follow thee whersoeuer my Conductor.

Doubt not my sweete friend (I would I might aswell call thee husbande) but that making an easie escape from hence, we may liue as contentedly elswhere: & being lawfull wedded (for that is the bounds of my loue) mutually haue fruition of loues delight, & that not in want, I being prouided of Iewels a light cariage worth aboundant of wealth, neither may they want that faithfully loue: much is it that I leaue, but much more would I loose, onely to win thee to my selfe: for Crisippus, from the first day that I viewed (God grant I may say, luckely viewed) thy face & personage, I wholy haue setled my selfe only thine own, wherefore neither scorne, nor feare to enioy what onely is thine, or at the least-wise, let her presently vnderstand thy pleasure, whose good, or badde dayes wholy consist on thy good, or bad answere.

The teares thus stopping her words, she wringeth his moist fist amorously betwixt her delicate hands, & hauing dried her eyes, thus proceedeth: if happely Crisippus, you finde ought of mondstie escaping my tongue, impute the same to thē integrity of loue, ẏ necessity of speedy dispatch, the answere of your own question, and to your owne late speech against coynesse. And so Maidenly bashfulnesse, hardly restraining a coniunction of lippes, shee endeth to speak, and beginneth againe to weepe

Cap.

Cap. 24.

CRisippus, albeit he did palpably beholde, feele and heare this angelical Temptatrisse, and her sweete Incantations, yet stoode he still like a headlesse stie, merueilously amased, and hardly parswading himselfe but that he had seene some vision, or in a dreame heard that melodious hermonie, or rather accounted by him (an vnpractised Songster) iarring discorde, as by his answere appeared: for feeling perfectly that he did wake and not sleepe, that he looked on her with open eyes, that had thus louingly laid open to him her heart, because he had neuer yet receiued preet-mony, or thought to haue marched after loues Onset, a beautifull blushing made him seeme more louely, but his ignorance in loue to answere thus absurdly.

When Serpents (qd. he) but hisse, then no man so foolish as to trust them, but vntill women sting, few men so wise as to mistrust them: your grace (I knowe) expecteth an answere, and I feare more to offend rudely, then that your Ladiship will pardon reply.

Is it possible that you so beautifull a Ladie, the onely daughter and heire of a king, forsaking those personages, whom for their worthinesse in euery respect you might well fantesie, should forsake them, and your liberty, and betake you to me, that am (as you knowe) no more, if so much, then a poore gentleman, the sonne of a Marchant, whose wealth in his store-houses is more then his gentrie with the Heralds, and my countenance (such as it is) in the Court, more thē the coine he can leaue in his Coffers, with whom: you cannot liue but in exile, and danger? is it possible I say, you should so much embace your selfe, as to embrace so homely an husband as is Crisippus? no Madam, no, Crisippus feareth he should clime to high, if Marpissa should fall so low, or perhaps hath learned by others losse, that a pleasant foe doth easily supplant.

Yet

Yet (pardon me Madam) I will not iudge, but that your Ladiſhip may intend the ſame loue, you outwardly pretend: which admitted, what elſe followeth? but that you priſing ſo cheape your loue ſhold be ouergreat a Loſer, and I buying ſo daungerous a bargaine a ſorrowfull Gainer: for kings haue eyes that pearce into euerie Trãnie, eares that heare in euerie companie, and hands that ſtretch into euerie Countrie, in whoſe affaires but onely to aime, is little better then to holde the Wolfe by the eares, or to walke vpon right narrow Bridges, ouer moſt deepe Foordes.

Seeing therfore (Madam) that ſuch loue would be ſo much loſſe to you, ſuch danger to me, & ſo preiudiciall to vs both, let it ſuffiſe, that I humble euen the knees of mine heart, to acknowledge your ſo rare bountie, and vouchſafe the ſame to impetrate pardõ, for denial of ſo vnprofitable proceedinges.

When Marpiſſa heard him make this vnkinde Concluſion, a bitter Acceptance (thought ſhe) of ſo bountiful an Offer only replying with cutting ſighes, and ſhaking her miſtempred head, as who ſhould ſay, ah deſolat wentch I, & hard-hearted wreatch thou, ſhe ſorrowfully departed to her lodging, whether by the teares trickling from downe her eyes, ſhe might haue bene tracted: leaueing Criſippus all alone in the ſame place, where they had thus talked of this euill hanſelled loue: who ſeeing her thus ſuddenly gone, returned then to the Duke his lodging, certifying to him the euill ſucceſſe of his ſute with Marpiſſa.

Well qd. the Duke (ſetting a good face on a bad matter) what remedie but perforced patience? they that may not loue where they would, muſt leaue when they may: and for ought I ſee the loſſe would bee light, were the fondneſſe of mine affection leſſe, for it is commonly ſeene, that praying Haggardes, and peeuiſh women as they are caught when they would not, ſo they checke when they

ſhould not: Thus did he ſmooth Brag, & ſmite Beautie, when his thought might wel haue controuled his tongue, bidding Criſippus farewel, whom loue did thus welcom to his lodging.

Cap. 25.

HIs Pedantie (the weather being moiſte) brought drie ſlippers to put on his feete, the Maiſter (his wits being on wol-gathering) hauing more neede of warme carchifes to binde on his head, the which was now become a hiue of buſſing Bees, not ſtanding as he thought, on his ſhoulders, but hanging by Geometrie: he knoweth not ſweete pongling, what loue meaneth, & yet he loueth, he would not loue, and yet could not but loue, yea and that ſo feruently, that hauing acquainted himſelfe but a ſmall time with the Copeſmate of loue, Solitarines, he might haue ben vſed in a Cõſiſtorie of louers in place of an Anathomie: being ſo much ẏ more wretched, by howmuch ẏ him ſelf was ẏ Author of his own wretchednes, in forſlowing goulden Opportunity, the ſmiling handmaide of Fortune.

But as loue did triumphe ouer Criſippus, ſo the ſame furie did tyrannyſe ouer Marpiſſa, who (a tollerable fault in that ſex) liued with as ſmall felicitie, as ſhee loued vnfortunatly: but yet not vtterly hopeles of better ſucceſſe, ſhe thought it labour not altogether loſt, to finiſh that reply in written tables, at their laſt departure begone only by pitifull geſtures: the which purporting many louing argumẽts, enterlaced alſo with ſome deſperate concluſions, were by her meſſenger deliuered to his peruſing.

When Criſippus had (with ioy enough) viewed & receiued thoſe plauſable lines, he by the ſame meſſenger thus reanſwered in writing her letters.

SO often do I accuſe my ſelfe of cowardiſe (moſt worthy Lady) as the hardines of the ſilly Snaile meeteth my remembrance, whoſe courage is ſuch, that the boulde worme is ſeene, venterouſly to clime the tops of the moſt

loftieſt

loftieſt Towers, when (to ſay troth) I through Timeritie haue baulked the proffered bountie of you: a Lady then whom liueth not any more louely: in excuſe wherof, I inſer the cauſe not to be any miſlike of the matter, but a miſtruſt of the maner, no defect of willingnes, but my too too vnworthynes, no light acceptãce of your ſo rare beautie, but the vnlikelihood of ſo ſtrang bounty: wherfore ſeeing that feare only hath bene my fault, I hope your curtious nature (ſweete Lady) will make a fauorable conſtruction of my childiſh errour, for the which I haue alredy perfor-med ſuch extreme pennãce, that had I not conceiued hope of life by your writing to day, death no doubt had taken away both hope & life before to morrow.

For my paſſed ſimplicitie I aſke pardon, & of my following fidelitie I craue triall, forgiue the one, & affie in the other: to whatſoeuer affaires, you ſhal imploy my ſeruice, to that only office ſhal I applie al duety: & what you henceforth account but an errour, that ſame ſhall I conclude an hereſie: only liue (Marpiſſa) to continue your loue, or Criſippus dieth to end his langour.

Your Graces more willing then worthy,
Criſippus.

From this day forwardes, they enioyed the benefit of many amorous meetinges, and in concluſion, of their vnſuſpected familiaritie proceeded a ſecret marriage.

Anon after the time drewe faſt on, wherein a marriage ſhould haue bene conſummated betwixt Marpiſſa & king *Staurobates*: but ſhe and Criſippus rather careleſſe of their liues, then inconſtant in their loues, fled together from the Court, more priuely, then prouidently as happened: for long were they not abſent but by & by miſſed, the Portes, Hauens, & whole Country being narrowly laide for their apprehẽſiõ: ſo that not able to flee far, ỳ were purſued ſo faſt, they might not be more couertly hid then they were curiouſlie ſought, & in the ende as crookedly found.

When the two Loues were brought into the presence of the two kinges, Staurobates (sweating in a new chaffe, as cast in his second accompt) sendeth as fierce lookes at Crisippus that had so forstalled his mariage, as did Selchim a sterne countinaunce at Marpissa that had thus disobeied his meaning, who adding these following speches, proceeded also to a terrible sentence.

Cap. 26.

Why suffer I the presence of thee so dishonest a child, by whose practise I am become so dishonoured a father? why haue I bene so carefull of thy wel-fare, that art so careless of thine owne preferment? were it not (thou impudent Strumpet) that I rather shunne to be noted of impacience, in giuing the bridle to my iust anger, then doubt to be charged of iniustice, in punishing so vniust a Trespasser, this heart of mine could redily consent, these handes willingly contriue, and these eyes gladly beholde that thy carcasse (mine onely decre) deade bewelte-
red in blood before my face, and trampled vppon with my
feete: but liue harlot, I say liue yet a while, that hast alre-
dy liued ouer long to me, & no lene vnluckely to thine own selfe: that I am offended and thou the offender thou shalt anon feele, if (contrary to kinde) the deuowring wilde beastes in the desertes shall not shew more curtesie, then I iustly occasioned, pretend pittie.

Beleeue me, thy light lookes haue made me before now suspitious of thy loose life, as alwaies more fearefull to preuent ỳ danger ỳ might proceed of thy wãton gestures, thẽ careful to recouer thee of any thy sicknesses, esteeming it lesse difficile to incounter my opẽ enemies in battle, thẽ easie to countermaund the secret Assalãts of they beauty.

This feare is incident to carefull fathers, that are sped of such amorous daughters, for whom, and that or euer they are iudged marriageable, besides dowries more

then

then easily disbursed, thankfully accepted, or profitably employed, must also be prouided husbands, least they (impatient of tariaunce) procure vnto themselues Paramours: yea rather than such hast (with a vengeaunce) should be hindered by non-sufficiencie, the louing Pigeons will first ot grow in their Shooes, or walke on their Toes, or adde to their Yeares or subtract from Childishnesse, or if yet disabled) suffer perhaps a large triall, before a long suspition: better knowing to entertaine a Louer at Thirteene, than to obay a Father at Thirtie. Let vs proffer a wealthie matche, and a man personable, the simpring Saintes will then, on Gods name, liue still maidens, or haue change of excuses not to marrie, when anon after themselues fantasing or flattered of some Jack or Clinchpoupe (bag they first, or begge they after) must, in the Diuels name, marrie, or not liue patiently Maidens: thus their first and cheefe studie is husbandes, and their last, and least care huswiferie.

But (am'rous Peate) seeing thou diddest refuse to be a Queene to Staurobates, and hast rather chosen to bee a Queane to Crisippus, whilste the one doth abhorre thy lightnesse, the other shall abie his liking. Wherefore my sentence is, that of thy death the sauadge Monsters doe execution: yet to thee, before thou passe to this punishmēt, the heart of this Leacher thy Louer (a gifte, no doubte, more pretious than the price) shall be deliuered, that as liuing on lust, I cannot terme it loue, of two, framed one masse of wickednesse, so (perhaps) dead, the bowels of one Beast, to eyther heart maye afoorde one, and the same Tombe.

Then commaundeth he that Crisippus should be forthwith bound, and his heart (a present for Marpissa) to bee carued from out his body: When the afflicted Ladye, hardlye obtaining audience to vtter these fewe woordes, sayd.

Alas, my deare Crisippus, howe daintie a dowzie haste

thou found my loue: how mercileſſe a father in law hath thy wife giuen thee: I would the price of my life might purchaſe thy libertie: but (alas) I wiſh too wel, to obtain ſo well, let it therefore ſuffice for a poore comfort, that thy Marpiſſa is gladly thy deaths Companion.

Criſippus hearing theſe ſweete ſpeeches to proceede from her, that had the preſent Poſſeſſion, and promiſed Reuerſion of his hart, not being ſuffered to acquit words with words, did only manifeſt the integritie of his vnremoueable loue, by often kiſſing the deadly Inſtrument, that ſhould anon bereaue him his heart, promiſed to Marpiſſa as a preſent.

Cap. 27.

THe brute of this ſeuere ſentence, thus paſſed vpon Criſippus and Marpiſſa, brought thether many pitifull beholders to haue ſeene the threatned Tragedie. Amongſt the reſt, whilſte this beautiful Couple prepare to offer vp their liues, as pledges of their conſtant loue, a very faire, and moſt comly woman, who heretofore had bene Nurſe to Criſippus, and euer after vntill that day, had bene entertained in the ſeruice of the Marchant man his father, the teares aboundantly ſteeming from out her amiable eyes, in great anguiſh caſteth her ſelfe at the feete of the two Kings, and ſayth.

If ſo be (mercifull, or mercileſſe kings) you graunt vnto me a ſillie woman like libertie of ſpeech, as you haue giuen cauſe of ſorrow, then ſhal I commend your clemenſie towards me, that cannot but condemne your crueltie towards theſe two, whoſe anſwering ages, combyned affections, agreeable complections, and what ſo elſe, & more then you know of gaining by equalitie loue, are in either ſo cõcurrant, as (in my iudgemẽt) you might rather wiſh what is alreadie hapned, then withſtãd that which is now helpeleſſe.

But

But least I also swallow vp that in silence, which vttered, may, perhaps, rebaite from their sorrowes, I shall now (as inforced thereunto) disclose long hidden secrets. You will mutter when I shall Affirme, but maruel when your selues cannot but Confirme, ꝑ Crisippus may claime no lesse Nobilitie from his Progenitors, than Marpissa Honour by her Parentage, that he is an Husband not vnworthie such a wife, that ꝑ Isme (Selchim) of thy fathers child is not of more roial blood, nor ꝑ Son (Staurobates) sprong from thy loines more noblier borne, you wil muse (I say) when your selues shall auouch this that I auarre: Wherefore let it not ought agrauate to his punishment, that Crisippus, ignorant of his right parents, acknowledgeth himselfe the sonne of a Marchant, or that from these homely paps of mine (lesse pleasing then in times passed) he hath sucked nourishment: but know Selchim, that he is the naturall sonne of Pheone thy neglected sister, shee the contracted wife of vnconstant Staurobates, he the vnnaturall father of condemned Crisippus, and my selfe (Selchim, and Staurobates) the same Pheone whom (happily) either of you hath longer lost, than lacked, and the one of you (no doubt) longer lacked then loued, albeit, Staurobates, at thy departure, and at the deliuerie of this Ring, thy flattering tongue could then whisper: That mine absence should bee bitter, and the delay of my presence Death.

Now therefore, if the one of you will deale gratiously with his desolate Sister, & the other gently with his well deseruing Louer, & either of you naturally with your distressed Children, thē at the least, be to thē meere Strangers, rather than so mercilesse Parents: yea remember (Staurobates) thou mayst not retaine Marpissa but by lust, Pheone being alreadie intertained thine owne by Lawe, whose life ought to stand betwixt thee, and a Bigamus.

By this time, and whilst she was yet speaking, Staurobates hauing perfectly fixed in the eyes of his memorie, the well knowne face and countinaunce of the amiable

Dia-

Dratrisse, giuing a signe to the Tormentors for staye of Execution, earnestly imbraced the Heroicall Nurse, saying: Well mayst thou deuine of the prosperous successe of thy demaund, when no creature liuing can be so welcome to this place, as art thou the Demaundēt. Think not that the homelinesse of thine habite, vnworthie thine honour, or any alteration whatsoeuer hath so begiled my sences, or estranged my loue, but that I gladly acknowledge my selfe the husbande of Pheone, & thy selfe th'only she whom Staurobates accepteth for wife.

Ah Pheone, had not thy misdeeme bene more than my misdeeds, then had not not thy ielous loue hapned so much to both our preiudice. But now well is me, and thrise happie bee this houre, wherein I renew whome I neuer did but loue, nor euer will but honour, thee my deare and daly beloued Pheone.

And then as he alleaged in his excuse, those reasonable causes before touched, king Selchim no lesse ioyfull to heare tidinges of his Sister, than was Staurobates glad to haue found his wife, imbraced her with as muche loue for a brother, as did the other for an husband, she as naturally resaluting, and reconciling her selfe to either.

Crisippus and Marpissa were now deliuered frō bands, and after many ioyfull teares, their passed mariage was also gladly confirmed by either parent, especially Staurobates demeaned exceeding great ioy, for the recouering of his vnknowne sonne: of whom, and of her own absence, Pheone in effecte this reported: That at Staurobates his departure into *India*, shee finding herselfe ouer-taken with his daliances, that had left her neither Maid, widow, nor wife, and not hearing from him according to appointment, did therefore as well to auoide the law, which was death, as the shame of her fault, which was her great belly leaue secretly the Court, & in the Desertes was deliuered of Crisippus: whome (being at point otherwise to haue perished) she swathed vp, decking him with muche

gold

gold, and many rich Iewels, and layd him in a Path, by which a homely countrie Matron vsually passed, to milke her Cattle in those Deserts, her selfe in the meane while, priuily watching the euent of this her deuise.

And how this good woman finding so faire a Boy, and so fat a bootie, presented the poore fisher-man her husband with such her findings: when thereupon herselfe (simply araied) repairing vnto their Cottage, and asking a entertainment became Nurse vnto her own sonne. Thē lastly, how the Fisher-man by this windfall greatly enriched, & long sithence become a Marchantman in that Citie, not hauing any child of his own had adopted Crisippus (being vtterly ignorant of any other Parentage) his Son. This she told, & a generall *Plaudiat* dissolued ỹ ioyfull assembly.

HEre is (qu. Abynados) loue vpon loue, and louers by huddles, a discourse (trust me) friuolous in telling, fruitlesse in hearing, but most foolish in Action: such loue being (in my conceit) so far off from loue, that I rather think it a doting Frenzie, and enemie to Reason, rouing headlong vpō Impossibilities: for were it that such louing fooles could temper their Extreame, with a Meane, then would they loue with more discretion, or leaue with lesse domage. For not improperly may loue be compared to the sore called an Oncom or Fellon, which beginning at the fingers end, and by sufferance falling into the Ioint doth hazard a Mahem, or at the least-wise a Cure: so loue beginning at the eye, & by sufferance descending to the hart doth threaten life, or at the least-wise Reason: as the one therefore at the first is to be scalded, so th'other is prestly to be suppressed, for without a timely violēce, either Malady is incurable. With such like discourses did *Th'assirians* cut the calme seas, & descrying a strange ship at anker not far off, vpon occasiō, did also the like, riding as nere to the vnknown ship as they colde: where not omitting to enquire after those in Quest of whome they thus sailed, occasion of that which now ensueth, was taken.

Deipyrus.

Calamus quintus.

Cap. 28.



It hapned that after many gentle salutations passed and repassed on either part, it grew in the end to such familiaritie, as neyther Companye doubted at their own pleasures friendly to booyde and reboorde eche others : and whilste the rest feast merely, and are tyed to the Canne by the teeth, Atys made a long and lamentable repoyt to Tymætes the *Lycian* Captaine (foy the strange Ship was of *Licia*) of the misse, oy rather losse of Sorares, and his companie, saying thus hath Foytune assailed the Father, and now assauteth the Childyen, triumphing his on Bale, and threatning our Blisse.

And no maruell, answered Tymætes, considering that Foytune is only constant in inconstancie: and as touching Blisse, it may be your opinion is hereticall, foy that true Blisse, in deede, perfoymeth a perpetuitie, whereas the flattering pleasures of this woyld, cannot pyomise one howers certaintie, and therefoye it may not be aptly termed

Blisse,

Bliſſe, whereof a chaunge is to bee doubted: and yet to attaine, or rather to attempt the ſweeteneſſe of a cleare conſcience, to exerciſe Uirtue, to combate with our Affections, to eſchew euill and doe good, to loue all and hate none, and to liue in the worlde as not of the worlde, are (no doubt) great arguments of bleſſednesſe, but no full aſſurances of Bliſſe, for that none may be ſayd bleſſed, vntill his laſt gaſpe hath diſſolued him from his naturall infirmities, and then, and not before followeth bleſſednesſe, the ſtipend of vertue.

As for worldly Proſperitie, I eſteeme the ſame nothing leſſe then proſperous, as a thing whoſe ſower neuer fayleth, and whoſe ſweet euer fleeteth, as a ſpurre to wickednesſe, and a bridle to well-doing: yea what glorious Titles, or wealth can this Step-dame of Uertue bequeath vs, ỳ perish not with, or before the Poſſeſſors: ſo, ỳ were not ỳ followers of Fortune more blind thã their Guide, of the two Proſperitie, and Aduerſitie, they would accounte the later as the more neceſſarie, becauſe it openeth the eyes of the hart that Proſperitie ſtopperh, and oftẽtimes redeemeth Uertue as it were out of a filthie Dungion.

But to wiſh Aduerſitie is leſſe needefull than neceſſarie: for ſo infinite, and inſcident are the Calamities that follow vs euen from our Cradles, that wel may we wiſh either not to haue bene borne, or quickly to die, and ſo many are the wronges that men inflict vpon men, that to reuenge all were impietie, and to ſuffer all impoſſible: wherfore iniuries (think I) not honeſtly to be diſſembled may diſcreetely be reuenged, or at the worſt, to ſeeke or worke reuenge is ſo much the leſſe infamous, by howe much the offered occaſion thereof is iniurious. That I ſhould thus mention iniuries you maye perhaps muſe, but whether there be cauſe or no I make you my Judges, thus ſtanding the caſe.

Deipyrus.

Cap. 29.

AFter the continuaunce of long, and wastfull warres betweene the *Lydians*, and the *Lycians* a Truse for certaine yeares was concluded, for assurance whereof, either side did deliuer their Pledges: the king my Father, (for a King is my father) sent into *Licia* a Noble man his Nephew, called Deipyrus, whome hee had not long before preferred to a Dukedome, & otherwise highly aduaunced: and the other king sent into *Lydia* a Noble yong Gentleman called Xenarchus, whose Father is king of *Cilicia*, and also at this present vsurpeth in *Lydia*, whereof my father only retaineth the name of king, but he the kingdom: and that by means of a Rebellion moued by the same Deipyrus, after his returne from hostage, wherof thus followeth the circumstance.

Deipyrus partly of his own aspiring courage, partlye suborned with rewards by my father his enemie the then *Lycian* king, but cheefely for loue of Eurymone the same king his daughter, with whom and him alwaies loue had already united harts, did secretly gather a rebellious Armie, and suddenly besieged my father in his owne Citie. Who seeing his Citizens not able to holde wage with the Besiegers, after long resistance, leauing behind him in the Citie the Queene my mother, and with her two Infants their children, conuaied himself into *Cilicia*, there desiring assistance against the Rebels, the which, in an ill hower, he easily obtained. But or euer any rescue might be conuaied into *Lydia*, my mother fearing to stay the Sack of the Citie, and entrie of the foe hourely expected for, fled priuily with her two infants, into a great Forrest not farre from the besieged Citie: where rootes and such wild berries as the place afoorded, making an exchaunge of their wonted fare, hardly lingered the soule in their bodies. In the mean while, the king of *Cilicia* lāded his men, rescued

the

the Citie, and purſued with great ſlaughter the flying Rebels: but myne vncle Deipyrus the chiefe Captaine & conductour of theſe trayterous Rebels, by chaunce recouered the before named Foreſt, and by that meanes eſcaped the ſworde of the Purſuers.

Long had he not wandred here, but that he hearde the pittifull ſhriekes of a woman, wherefore making to the place from whence the ſounde came, he perceiued a Lady likely to haue bene abuſed by two ſtragling ſouldiours of *Cilicia*: in whoſe defence at once he aſſailed them both, and in the ende valiantly chaſing them away deliuered her of their purpoſed trecherie: which done, not knowing whō he had ſo reſcued, he demaunded what ſhe was, and how it fortuned her and her two infants, to wander ſo daungerouſly in the ſame Foreſt.

My miſerable mother (for it was my Queene mother) not knowing in that caſe, the man vnto whoſe queſtions ſhe was then to anſwere, dying her dropping eyes, and falling at his feete, when ſhe had ſtilled her ponglinges who with their pretie golles hugging about her necke cried out (which her ſelfe wanted) for foode, not daring to bewray what one ſhe was, ſaide.

Cap. 30.

LIke as (good Sir) no deſertes other then your owne valour, perſwaded you erwhile to vſe courage in my defence, euen ſo the defect of mine abilitie (reſpecting my wretched eſtate) may diſſwade you from all hope of any ſmall Recompence, only accept of her poore thankes that ſhall ply the gods with often prayers, that they hearing my wiſh, may furniſh my wāt with a reward for your merits, otherwiſe I continually reſt your diſabled debtor.

But in that you aſke what one I am, alas Sir, ſee you not ẏ I am a moſt deſolat woman: not borne to beg though now leſſe happie thē a Begger, who late did wāt nothing,

and now haue nothing, not longe since as wealthy, as I now am wretched, able to haue harboured the best, but now more harbourlesse than the worst: and therfore feele I affliction so much the more burdenous, by how much I once possessed aboundance: for no want more miserable, then to haue bene wealthy.

Who is it that feeleth not, or at the least wise heareth not, vnto what spoile, and penurie the Rebels haue nowe left all *Lidia*? to auoide whose outragious proceedinges, I haue chosen with these my poore infantes, to linger out our dying liues in this Forrest, though death (no doubt) would haue bene to vs misers, farre more sweeter.

Woe, yea endlesse woe, befall that vngratfull Traitor Deipyrus, the vnnatural ruine of his natural Countrie: oh that once, or euer these eies of mine shall leaue this light, I might see the Caitiffe in like distresse (if like might be) as presently am I, or that the Villaine were as neere my reatch as euen now are you: then would I a-while adiorn these womanish teares, and with these handes (vnaccustomed to such deedes) claw out his trecherous eyes: but (alas) to wish vengeãce is nothing lesse then to be reuenged, for had I the hap to possesse my wish, I haue the hart should performe my will, or might my curse procure him hell, my blesse should neuer preferre him to heauen: well leauing the Reprobate to a Million of mishaps, which (I doubt not) will insuently ensue his misdeedes. may I, good Sir, request your name, and withall the present estate of our beseiged Citie?

Deipyrus with no small remorse, noting the pitious distresse of the vnknowne Queen my mother, & hearing him selfe to himselfe, so euill spoken of and banned wist not what to say, as one but euen then ouertaken with the guiltinesse of his owne Conscience, which is euermore a seuere Accuser, and to the impenitent person a most terrible Judge: but in the ende after some astonishment, he made her this aunswer.

Lady

Lady qd. he (as perceiuing in her many arguments of Gentrie) by good reaſon ſuffer we loſers to chafe, neither is it a new thing, that a wronged woman in like bitter termes doth vtter her paſſionate ſtomache: Deipyrus (I muſt confeſſe) being the common enemie to his Countrie, hath incurred a cõmon curſe of the *Lydians*, whoſe chaſtiſment being generally deſired of all, ſhall priuatly be reuealed onely to you. The ſame man, Lady, whoſe infamous Attempts, hath returned the Attemptor a iuſt guerdon of his deſertes, and he whoſe puniſhment would be vnto you ſuch pleaſure, preſenteth himſelfe before your eyes, as hardlye diſtreſſed as your ſelfe haue deſired: whoſoeuer you are, that Deipyrus hath ſo much offended, the ſame as humbly prayeth you of pardon: offering alſo into your handes mine owne weapon, vpon mine owne head to wreake your vengeance, if it ſhal ſo pleaſe you by death to ſhorten my penance: or elſe as your Bondſlaue in your buſines to employ my whole endeuour, if by life you thinke good to lenghten my puniſhment: for as I would not die a deſperate Murtherer, Tormentor, and Traitor to mine owne perſon, ſo wiſh I not to liue a deſpiſed Runnagate, Reprobate, and Recreant to mine own Countrie: wherefore you being the Judge, the grieuous ſpectacle of theſe your pyning Infantes mine Accuſors, and my ſelfe (which of it ſelfe is ſufficient) pleading to the accuſation guiltie, if you pronounce ſentence of death, you doe but Juſtice without partialitie, the executing of which ſentence, ſhalbe the accompliſhment of you deſire, and the reward of my deſertes.

Cap. 31.

When Deipyrus had after this ſorte finiſhed ſuch his ſpeeches, recounted to her after what manner the ſiege was raiſed by the king of *Cilicia*, deliuered into her handes his naked ſworde, and ſolemnly vowed not to reſiſt

reſiſt her wome: as touching his life, or death, mine inraged Queene-mother graſping the yeelded weapon in her hande, was fully reſolued to haue sheathed the ſame in the bowels of Deipyrus: when by and by altering her purpoſe, by reaſon of his ſtraunge ſubmiſſion, and waying his lucke with her owne loſſe, ſhee thinketh him alredy ouer ſeuerely puniſhed, and her wronges ſufficiently reuenged: yet anon caſting her pitifull eyes vpon her pyning Babes, rufully hanging about her their helpeleſſe Mother for foode, not there to bee had, her myldeneſſe was now conuerted to madneſſe, and as one vtterly reſolute on his death, in conceite ſhee imagined him alredy deade, ſo fully was ſhee bente to bereaue him of life: but euen at the verie puſhe, from out her vnhardie hande ſhee letts fall the harmeleſſe weapon, and accuſeth her ſelfe of ingratitude, ſhall I (thinkes ſhee) returne ſo graceleſſe a recompence, in lieu of his late ſo gracious an enterpriſe? is it not much more gaine to me, that I am deliuered of Rauiſhmente which had bene incurable, then loſe in that I am diſgarniſhed of Riches which are recuperable? yes, yes, the vertue of the firſt, is more then the errour of the latter, why then ſhoulde I not admitte the one, and remitte the other.

Thus reaſoning with her ſelfe, as one offended with his paſſed Conſpiracies, pacified by his preſent Contrition, and gratefull for his late profitable Combate, ſhee diſſembleth the firſt, accepteth of the ſeconde, and thanketh him for the thirde: onely deſiring his aſſiſtance to puruaie for their ſuccour, vntill hearing of more quietnes abroad, they might with leſſe daunger leaue the comforles Forreſt.

Whereunto he redily cõdiſcented, building thẽ bowres, killing thẽ victuals, & in what he poſſibly might in their releeſe imploing his whole induſtrie, not knowing of all this while who they weare, vnto whome he became ſo

careſull

carefull an Attendant: albeit by circumstances, he might haue bene induced to the knowledge of his charge, for my Mother somewhat to be disburdened of the burning sorrowes, of her bursting heart (for working vessels and wofull heartes, the one by vent the other by wordes, are deliuered from breaking) taking occasion, in the hearing of Deipyrus to speake of the king my Father, would sometimes vse these and such like speeches.

I woulde Deipyrus, you coulde giue as good warrantie of the King his wel-fare, as I a promise, with a performance betwixte him and you of an Attonement: but (alas) notwithstanding your discomfiture, I am not so comforted that I rest feareles of *Cilician* practises, well might the good King speede, what euill so-euer I suffer, who not prospering, I, mine, and many perish, and therefore dare I saie, that with greater disease for his woe, or gladder desire of his wealth, his Queene, and wife cannot labour than presently doe I, that neither in the one nor the other do giue place to his best wel-willer.

Thus did she often make her mone a farre off, not daring in plaine tearmes to disclose her selfe, remembring how daungerous it is to repose confidence in a reconciled enemie, & in that point shewing her selfe better aduised then was my Father: who giuing credite to the fayned shewes of a friendly foe, did learne by the prise of a deere sallarie, the proofe of a drie dessembler, and how to clime vp by the Breare, is to be clawed with the Bramble: for my Father, making account to be re-established in his kingdom, receiued frō ỳ *Cilician* king this crosse answere.

Sir qd he, your plentifull thankes are superfluous, and your profered liberalitie needeless, for that you perhaps, will thinke me vnworthy so much, whilst I thinke my selfe worthy of more, and therefore may you proportion your thankes as it likes you, seeing my portion shal be as it lists me.

Is it an easie matter (thinke you) to transport an Armie out of *Cilicia*, to hazarde our liues in *Lydia*, and hauing incountred and conquered the enemie, to conuerte the glorie of the battle, and gaine of the bootie to the profit of others? no, no, I may profit you but not preiudice my selfe: Let it suffice that I haue corrected your Fooes, and that your selfe escape vnreuenged of our auntient emnitie: ouer and besides which vndeserued friendship, I giue you a Ship in all thinges well furnished, with sufficient treasure to supplie your expenses: and thus knowing my minde, the sooner you be packing, the safer may it be for your person: as for *Cilicia* I haue Xenarchus my sonne there to gouerne, & here in *Lidia* want not souldiours to engarison.

Unto whom in few wordes my Father thus replyed, that iustly condemning his pretence, and despysing his proffers, it lastly rested that Fortune his foe, might one daie crie quittance with falshoode his friende: and so onely accompanied of three or foure of his faithfull seruants, (as doubting the worst) fled secretly into the before mẽtioned Forrest, not knowing the same to be the Receptacle of Deipyrus, much lesse of his misled wife and childre, but least of all, that the same his traiterous Nephewe did vse such sort ministerie to their necessities.

Cap. 32.

WIthin this Forrest, in a pleasant Glade, the sheepeherdes to take Wolues and other rauening beastes, haunting their Flockes had digged a verie deepe & daungerous Pit, laying boughes slightly ouer-twhartes, and artificially couering the same ouer with greene Turues, so that the subtilitie thereof might hardly be espyed: into which Pit Deipyrus ranging abroade, to seeke after sustenance for him selfe and his charge at vnwares slipped: and seeing no possibilitie of deliuerance from thence

complai-

complaineth after this manner.

Sower is that ſweete which decaieth in the bloſſome, but ſweete is that ſower that dyeth in the budde: ah happie man Deipyrus, that being forworne with Correction, haſt at the length wearyed Fortune with correcting, and ſhalt anon preſent death with the glad deliuerie of thy toyleſſe life: and that not ſuddenly amongeſt the impenitent Pikes, but ſlowlier then thou wouldeſt amiddeſt this Pitte, wherein appeareth the great mercie of the good gods, in reſpect of the ſmall merits of ſinnefull men.

O that the ſecrete bowels of the earth that denieth not to burie me, as no doubt the vpper face thereof diſdayneth to beare me, coulde aſwell conceale my vile faults, as it doth couer my vitious fleſh: then ſhoulde my Treaſons which now ſeeme odious to the heauens, infamous to the world, hurtefull to many, daungerous to the moſt, deteſtable to all, and burdinous to mine owne conſcience, then (I ſay) might ſuch mine offences ſurceaſe to ſuruiue deceaſed Deipyrus, which (alas) will then be hardly ripe, when I ſhalbe happely rotten.

Neuertheleſſe, I am not nowe to dreade the worſt of mercyleſſe men that ſlowly forget, but to hope the beſt of the mercifull gods that ſwiftly forgiue: nowe am I to ſitte vppon my ſelfe as Iudge, and againſt my ſelfe to pronounce iudgment, that the Gods ſeeing me impartiall in mine owne caſe, may (as no doubt they will) ſpare me for the ſame cauſe: for it more ſtandeth vs vppon to confeſſe, then to defende our follies. It is, alas, a common imperfection to offende, but an vnwonted perfection to repent, and why? the firſt ſpringeth from Nature, but the other from vertue: yea Nature (whereunto we eaſily incline) is in effect Securitie to Sinne, & feare of worldly ſhame biddeth vs iuſtifie our ſelues: when (in deede) to liue in Securitie is not to die in ſafetie: for meete it is that ỹ honny which ſeemed pleaſant in the mouth, be cõuerted to

bitter wormewood in the stomacke, and vtterly abhorred of the soule.

Doth not the pleasantnesse of the fruite, make amends for the bitternesse of the roote? the hoped for ioy in the harbour, moderate the suffered perils on the Seas? and the will to be released of the maladie, asswage the sharpnesse of the medicine? and shall not I that grone with Repentance in mine heart, hope thereby to gaine refreshment to my soule? yes verely yes, so to hope winneth an effectuall hire: that we be Contrite it is necessarie, that our Contrition be equiparent to our Transgressiõs more necessarie, but if the qualitie of our Repentance exceedeth the quantitie of our offences then is the same most acceptable.

But (wretches that we are) flesh and blood perswade the contrarie, saying we scarce trip, when (in deede) wee stumble downe right, that the crime is verie light when the same is most weightie, that we shall liue long, and may at leasure repent, when in a moment we are taken away or euer we thinke to amend, and so in the end perrish desperatly that persist diuelishly: for as therefore the gods are greatly delighted with Repentance, so are they grecuously displeased with Procrastination.

It only remaineth then, that I imbrace thee (O sweete Repentance) a burthen so much the lesse ponderous, by how much thou increasest in greatnes: to the pricked conscience thou art the perfit consolation, and the only counterchaunge to deserued confusion: with thy feete onely we run to mercy, & without thy winges flie we not from vengeance: thou (I say) doest reprehend mine errors, & therefore will I apprehende thy vertues, neuer giuing thee ouer, vntill (by death at least) I comprehend thy sweetenesse.

Whilest Deipyrus most desirous to haue died, spake yet more in the darke pit, one while remembring the distresse of his guideless Charge, left at randon in the dangerous

Forrest,

Forrest, and often naming (whome he made account neuer more to see) his deare Eurimone the king of *Licia* his daughter, whose loue was the greatest part of his interprised lewdnesse, but neuer forgetting with a penitent heart, and bitter teares to send forth his humble prayers, as his soules Harbengers.

It chaunced my Father and his Company to wander along the same Glaede, and (not doubting at all the subtilitie of the place) one of them fell hedlong into the same couered Pit, lighting so boisterously vpon Deipyrus, that he bore him downe to the earth in a sowne: the other only astonished with the fall, and not receiuing farther harme: after a while feeling, but not seeing the panting body of a man lying prostrate, wrought such meanes that he recouered Deipyrus out of his traunce.

By which time my Father and the others aboue had letten downe wythes, and other deuises which they had framed for the purpose, so drawing vp the man that was newly fallen into the pit: who (not a little ioyfull of so speedie deliuerie) aduertised them, how there was yet remaining behind an other person, to him vnknown.

Whereupon letting downe the second time, they drewe Deipyrus vp into the open ayre, that wel-nere of a day and night before, had scarcely discerned any light of the sunne or starres.

Cap. 33.

BVt when the king my father beheld the plight of Deipyrus, and the same perceiued the presence of my Father, it was a world to note the alteration of either their Countinances.

Especially Deipyrus consumed with the pensiueneſſe of his hart, infeebled through weakeneſſe of body, and confounded in the guiltineſſe of his owne Conſcience had better cause often to chaunge his colour, then (as it hapned)

to dread my fathers choler: Wherefore onely accusing Fortune for such extraordinarie malice, and exclaming of Death for that peramptorie delay, he fell flat to the earth as one vtterly bereste of sence: the Tender of whose dolorous passions, might haue bene pleaded in full Acquittance of all passed Trespasses, had Enuie it selfe followed the Action, and Rigour occupied the place of Iudgement.

My father (contrarie to all expectation) ouercomming Ire, and being himselfe ouercome by pitie, not withoute watrie eyes, lifting vp Deipyrus that shamed to looke him in the face, sayd.

If (Deipyrus) thou werte vnsuspitious of my nature, mindful what I once was, and not ignorant what I now am, thou wouldst not suppose the Accident of the last, to cause an Alteration in the first, that is, not thinke mee a mercilesse Begger, whom thou diddest know to be a pitifull King, neither wouldst thou doubt the authoritie of the second, seing I that late might haue commaunded thee to Iudgement, do not now dare in any place to demaund Iustice, and without Law to determine a wrong, is in Lawe to decline from right: neuertheless, but euen now, did I thinke it a very hard thing to hold my tongue in anguish, harder to hold my hands in Anger, but hardest of al to forgiue mine Enemie: but Sufferance the harts Phisition, (I wot not how preuailing) telleth me nowe, that Anger should be as shorte, as the same is sudden: that hastie Wroth is an harmefull Councellor, betwixt too muche and too little not obseruing a meane: that the ende of Wrath is Shame or Repentaunce, or both: and that the same euill may easily be auoided, if but a small time it be deferred: for time, I perceaue, doth moderate Ire, and better man is he that wisely subdueth his Furie, than he that with armour sacketh a Citie: neither is any Reuēge more valiaunt, than to pardon a foe that is vanquished.

It

It is I say, Deipyrus, but euen now, that no suche Argument could haue perswaded what moderation my selfe doe nowe prosecute: and no maruell if my patience was then mooued, when thine Ingratitude was so manifested: for easilier doe wee suffer a wound fastened by a Foe, than sustayne a wrong offered by a Friend, as esteeming the first, trespasse, but the latter, Treason.

With more greefe than gaine I see, by thine example (vnaduised Nephew) I see it, that Enuie drinketh vp the greatest part of her own poison, and that whilst the minde flieth higher than it should, in time the man falleth lower than he would: neither doe the same Effects, euer follow the same affections, for braue Intentes haue often times base Euents.

Well (Deipyrus) seeing by thy death I may not recouer my losse, it shall suffise if by sparing thy life I may so reobtaine thy loue, for be assured, my kindnesse is yet as much as our kindred: and to thee I gladlye participate this comfort whereof my selfe am not yet destitute, that is, No degree of miserie maye exceede a Superlatiue, and when Mischiefes are at the highest pitche, then eyther succeedeth an Amendment, or of necessitie an End: for at the worst, ỳ hardest Winter of ioy hath death a Bound.

But not to hope beyond hope, say I (Deipyrus) is contrary to courage: Fortune is sayd thus to haue spoken of her selfe:

Dicit Fortuna, si starem rota sub vna,
Et non mutarer, non tunc Fortuna vocarer.

And why then shoulde I thinke it vnpossible, that did sometimes on the very top of the Wheele vaunt *Glorior elatus*, though anon *Decendo mortificatus*, & now *Infimus axe teror*, in time to adde *Rursus ad astera feror*?

Cap. 34.

NOw after diuers louing imbracinges, and that many kinde teares had caused a long silence, my Father aduertised Deipyrus and the rest, that firste his intent was to seeke out his Queene and two children, affirming their misse to touch nearer than any other his misfortunes, and then to enterprise somewhat in recouerie of his detayned kingdome.

Whereupon Deipyrus did tell my father of the Ladye, and her two Infants, ouer whome (as before) hee had taken charge in that Forrest, and was very desirous before their departure from thence, to haue succoured the distresse of those three.

But hereunto my Fathers answere was, that in their owne case delay might be dangerous, *Lydia* (sayth he) at this day affordeth more than ynough such distressed wanderers, whome not to be able to helpe it greeueth, and for whome to hurt our selues were not requisit: he that once flieth may againe fight: whilst the Prince liueth to hope, the peoples case is not desperate: Iupiter woulde not then rescue Danaes, when he was to resist Saturne, neyther let vs so admit pitie, that we omitte matters of greater importance.

Deipyrus who seemed thus aunswered, but in his pitifull minde not satisfyed, vndertaking (as hee that made himselfe best acquainted with that forrest) to conduct his companye the nearest waye to the Sea, did of purpose leade them directlye to that place, where hee had before left his helpelesse Charge, and there hee founde them all three pitifully weeping, and vtterlye destitute of comfort.

No sooner did my father behold this sight, but (as it were at once, ouertaken with extreme ioy, and extreame greefe) he forthwith sowneth: my mother also (for by this time

time she knew him) endeuouring to giue him succour falleth also into the like traunce: but eyther of them being anon recouered, and nothing omitted in passion, word, or action insident to so vnlooked for, louing, and lamentable a meeting they consult of their safetie, and how to proceed in their Enterprises.

In the end, induced by such profitable and discrete reasons as Deipyrus then aleaged, they all bend their iournie towards *Licia*: where they were no sooner arriued, but they heard report of the *Lician* king his death, and perceiued great prouision to enthronize in the Soueraintie Eurymone, Deipyrus his Lady and louer.

Deipyrus not a little ioyfull of these tidings, & affying in his Lady her Constancie, with the rest of his companie (vnknowne to all that met them) repayred to the Courte: and when hee had disclosed himselfe, and his distressed friendes to Eurymone, she comforted them with suche honourable and hartie entertainment, as did both giue a perfection to their hope, and a defection from all heauinesse: taking (according to their former couenaunt of loue) Deipyrus to husband, who ioynly at this daye, rule king and Queene in *Licia*.

And there haue my deprriued parents euersince liued in such prosperitie, that their exile might be sayd an Aduãcement: in whose quarell also Deipyrus for the recouerie of *Lydia*, hath long time maintained open and sharp warres againste the king of *Cilicia*: towards whom to entreate of diuers waightie affaires giuen me in charge, I am nowe sayling.

Cap. 35.

BEfore the curteous knight Tymetes had fynished this his speeche, Atys and Abynados had espyed in the *Lycian* Ship a very fayre Target, whereuppon was curiously engrauen, and in liuely colours purtrayed the ter-

rible Image of enraged Semiramis, in such maner as shee behaued her self, when being informed of the beseeging of *Babilon* she rushed from out her tiring Chamber, her eyes seeming to sparckle fyre, in her hande brandishing her weapon, and her flasking haire losely wauing vppon her bare shoulders, as hauing vowed not to bind vp the same her disordred Tresses, vntill she had vtterlye expelled the Besiegers: the which (notwithstãding the great strength and number of her enemies) with fortunate expedition, she performed as valiantly in deede, as shee had vowed the same couragiously in word. The two brethren (as I sayd) earnestly viewing this Targat, could not perswade themselues, but that the same once appertained to Sorares thir Father, in whose hand when hee disankered from *Niniue* they had seene it: and therefore after they had opened their thoughts, and moued some questions concerning the same, such was Tymętes his answere.

In *Sarmatia* (qd. he) a warlike nation in *Scithia*, from whence I now come, and whether I am shortly to return ruleth an vncle of mine, of whose gifte I receaued this Targat: the whiche togeather with an infinite masse of Treasure, Apparell, Armour, and other Ornamentes after the *Assirian* fashion came to his possession, through the ariuall of a distressed Shippe being driuen into his Countrie, wherein remained only twe *Meades*, and the same very aged and impotent persons: of whose aduentures I am not able to make any further Report, sauing that they seemed to take great vnkindnesse, of the auarice, and crueltie of certaine *Assirians*, whome they had lefte shipplesse in a barren Iland: but being neuertheleſſe most desirous of their deliuerie, mine Vncle hath promised to satisfie them therein, as soone as the season of the yeare serueth, to crosse those blustring and daungerous Seas: and truste me, Gentlemen, it is not vnlikely (whereof I thought not before) but that these *Assirians* may be your parents, and friends after whom you make this enquirie:

if

if therefore (for I imagin it shall be worth your labour) it may please you first to saple with me into *Lydia*, and after to resaile into *Sarmatia*, I promise you my companye thether for your conduction, and my credit there for your countinaunce.

The *Assirians* gathering much hope of such Tymetes his comfortable tydinges, & thankefully accepting what hee curteously offered, disanker with him and saile into *Lydia*: neither could they saple much awrie, that to finde out Sorares they knew not when, were to seeke they wist not where.

To shorten therefore their sayling, in *Lydia* I now land them: where to leaue them (sielie soules) in the decke, were for me, of rarer matters than yet mentioned to liue in your debt: of whiche the Tragedie now ensuing shall partly discharge me.

(·)

Aphrodite.

Calamus ſextus.

Cap. 36.



Ot long after they had taken lande, Xenarchus a moſt deare friend and ſeconde himſelfe to Timartes, and Timętes ſuch and the ſame to Xenarchus, betwirt whom (notwithſtanding the deadly emnetie, and impacable diſcord ſo long time continued, and daylye encreaſing betwirte the two kinges their fathers (for Xenarchus, as is before-ſayde, was Sonne to the King of Cilicia) Nature in reſpecte of the Symphatie of their mindes, in two bodies ſeemed to haue planted but one and the ſame hart, immediately I ſay, as Tymartes had ſet foote on Shoare, he mette Xenarchus readie to haue taken Shippe: who after many friendly greetinges, ſayd.

It fareth with me (friend Tymętes) as with one that hauing delightfully dreamed, is therefore diſpleaſed with ſuch delight becauſe the ſame was but a dreame: I that ſcarſely haue time to put forth my hande for a wel-come, muſt finde leaſure to poure forth my teares for a fare-wel, otherwiſe in ſhewing my ſelfe a dutifull friend, I ſhoulde be thought a diſobedient Sonne, and to vs either twaine the damage might purſue all one. I haue (Tymętes) more newes then time to tell it, only thinke it ſtandeth vs vppon

to

to be circumſpect, of our tri-partite familiaritie begone with Mazeres, leaſt thereby our by-parted friendſhip be called into queſtion by my Father: for I perceiue, the Hawke now beginneth to checke, that er-while came ſo freely to fiſt: thou maieſt trie him, but do not truſt him, ſo farforth eſteeming Mazeres thy Friende as thou ſtill make accounte Mazeres may bee thy Foe, for the Countenance may double with the Conſcience: and therefore do Flatterers praiſe vs becauſe they would prize vs: by this much thou maiſt anotomize a meaning. I hope to finde thee here, at my returne from *Cilicia*, meane while let friendſhip, and often recourſe of Letters make vs preſent in mindes, that are abſent in perſons: and thus ſorrowfully taking their leaues, they departed either of thē his ſeuerall waie.

When Tymætes, Atys, Abynados, and their company had beſtowed them ſelues in *Sardis*, in which Citie the Courte then lay, and after Tymætes had conferred with the King, and whileſt he attended his deferred anſwere, they with the leſſe tedioulneſſe to paſſe forth the time of their aboade in *Lidia*, one while frequente the delectable Springes, ſweete Groues, and braue proſpectiue Hils, dedicated to the *Meonian* Muſes, & another while do as much wonder at the glittering Riuers *Pactolus*, and *Hermus* caſting on ſhoare their goulden Sandes, as delight in the muſicall Quier of Swannes that ſweetely ſing on the bankes of *Eniſter*.

But neuer could they glut their hungrie eyes, in beholding the Ridlike faire Troupes of *Lidian* Laſſes, amongeſt whom in generally, nature might rather ſeeme for her owne learning to haue borrowed beautiful Preſidentes, then able vppon them to haue beſtowed braue Perfections: in furtherance wherof the gentle Planettes, temperate Climates, holſome Scituation, fertil Soile, and what not: were in all thinges occurrant: ſo that not without good reaſon, were the Nymphes of *Meonia* cal-

led terreue goddesses, aswell in respect of themselues as their alotted Paradise: and not onely to the iocunde Venerian, but euen to the melancholike Saturnest it might haue moued delectatiō, to haue viewed these louely Wenches, with their yealow Tresses dependant shadowing their iuorie Shoulders: and how their short Frockes of silke girte to their small Middles, being sometimes, amiddest their wanton daunces, whisked vp by the winde discouered their demie buskins, smothly planted with backels of goolde to their daintie Ancles, and eftsoones bared their white knees.

Atys (as it seemed) delighted with these day Starres and nightshades, the chiefe Principles (no doubt) of his Astrologie, remembring the *Scythian* Lorde his late vnanswered inuectiue against this sweete sexe, and nowe (though out of season) feeling himselfe thus amorously animated to speake somewhat in their defence, said to Abynados, in the hearing of diuerse Ladies, and gentlemen as followeth.

Cap. 37.

LIke as (saith he) the dead Sea *Asphaltus* in *Syria* is indifferently cōmended, in respect that no liuing Creature may therein miscarrie, as condemned in that no mouable Substance therein doth ingender, euen so our *Scythian* host (in mine opinion) shewed himselfe no more curteous by his bounteous intertaining of wanderers, then currish by his byting inuaying against Women: not vnlike as if a Moile being tickled with a Hornet in the taile should lash out at random with the heeles, or as if Hellen beguiling, Lucrecia should be banned: when (in deede) we are not to esteeme worser of women, then doe hunters of Unicornes, who though they goore with the hornes, yet are they got for their hornes: Bees with honnie haue stinges, and we all haue our faultes, admit the good-

wife

wife play foule, ſhoulde therefore the goodman play the foole: I ſay no, becauſe he begining the quarrel at home, to ciuile vnquietnes may ſo adde impudent perſeuerance, and then houſholde iarres ſhall bid his good-dayes good-night: but in any caſe if Venus be founde in Coniunction with Mars, let Vulcan ſhow his cunning onely in concealing, and rather ſleepe to Beagles, then awake Bandogges: otherwiſe for Iuſticers he ſhal but finde gibers, and thoſe that wil rather be alike detected, then alike ſuſpected: for when thinges are publiſhed for common, they are then practiſed for currant, and then what with firſt Playfeares, and laſt Smel-feaſtes in vaine ſhall Iunos beardſman watch Iupiters Heckfare.

The Fore moſt of all miſtrusteth the Fore, neither is the deceiuer fearceleſſe of deceit, and were it not (thinke women) that iealous men did them ſelues falſly enter, they woulde not ſuſpect women to beare men to many: wherefore (ſillie ſoules) plaie they, faire or play they foule ſeeing themſelues alike ſuſpected, they hould it but good reaſon to requite ſuch open ſorowe, by the aduantange of ſome priuie ſollace, and will venture if but for a Reuenge.

Thus ſee we that iealous men, do the rather helpe forwardes the ſecret eſcapes of women: beſides which may be added, that with importunate ſutes, charming words, intiſing gifkes, opportunitie of time, and place, and by a thouſand other deuiſes of ſufficiencie to moue mountaynes, their good, but not deified natures, the which to cerſtuent mē neuer ceaſe to fiſh for opportunities, be labored.

It reſteth then, ſeeing the Eie, the Eare, & the Conceit are the only ſurfets of ſuch ſickneſſe, that I ſee, & I ſee not is a ſoueraigne emplaiſter to one ſo wounded, not to ſee, nor to deſire to ſee an eſpeciall preſeruatiue againſt ſuch maladies, but he that will neither ſee it, heare it, nor beleeue it, ſhall haue more then can phiſicke warrant, neuer to die with ſwallowinge of Fly-blows, and excepte his

ſtomacke

ſtomack be moꝛe then ſqueimiſh, the fiſh ouerflowen of the Birde Aſpra, not at all feele the ſame contagious. Let it ſuffize, that women as they be ſubtle in counſell, ſo are they ſecret in conuaiance, foꝛ he that firſt bloweth to vncupple, ſhall be the laſt that commeth into the fal: but to him that curiouſlie ſearceth a knife, wherewithall to cut his owne thꝛoate, I ſay Argus his heade to bee well woꝛthy Mercurie his handling: well thus haue I bꝛiefly, not as I coulde, alleaged the beſt, foꝛ thoſe againſt whom might be obiected the woꝛſt.

Cap. 38.

BUt what ſhall I ſaye to thoſe ſtoicall Pꝛeſciſians, oꝛ rather ſupernaturall Hoddipeakes, that barke out their raylinges againſt the excellencie of all Women in generall? ſhall I tearme them fleſhly lompes without Life, Fires without Heate, Ghoſtes without Subſtãce, oꝛ Shadowes without Sence? not ſo, but as the beaſt Chimer hath a Lions face, but a Dꝛagons taile, ſo thoſe beaſtes haue continent woꝛdes, but vnchaſt woꝛkes, and ſeeme deuoute, when (in deede) their deuotion is nothing leſſe then their ſeeming: foꝛ they fare with Women as do Riders with their Hoꝛſes, who ſpur them not to run from them, but to ruu with them, oꝛ as Lapidaries with their pꝛetious ſtones, that hew them not foꝛ anger, but foꝛ aduauntage.

Some of which ſoꝛt, liue not ſingle as pꝛetending to liue chaſt, but deny marriage as pꝛeuenting a charge, oꝛ (like the Fox that will eate no grapes) haue not Wiues becauſe they hate them, but hate Women becauſe they cannot haue them: and ſome other whoſe affections no doubt coulde affoꝛde them to loue, did not their infiꝛmities infoꝛce them to leaue, play theꝛefoꝛe the enuious Dogge in the Manger: but much moꝛe ſafer were it, ſay I, foꝛ ſuch Hypocrites to be iuſtly repꝛoued foꝛ incontinent

tinent ſinner, then falſly reputed for chaſt liuers, for then the diſcloſing of the one might procure them humble Spirits, wheras the diſſembling of the other puffeth vp their hawtie Stomackes: whom if we ſhould admit to be ſuch as they ſeeme, yet far more commendable is poore Matrimonie, then proude Chaſtitie.

It is, truſt me, ridiculous to heare, howe theſe Monſters would monſterſie the Manners, and Ornaments of Women, which they receiue naturally, or applie to beautefie: as if (forſooth) like Sheepe, ſeeing water they muſt needes thirſt, or greene Meadowes fall to graſing, when in troth, not the Wardrop, nor the Woman, but their owne wanton inclinations, ſetteth Flaxe eaſily on burning.

And yet (Ladies) theſe are they who giue foorth, that your naturall beauties are no other then artificiall ſhadowes, if you keepe in, then ſay they you are ſeruing your Cuſtomers, if you walke out, ther ſeeking for Clyantes, if brauely appareled then Players, if meanely attyred then Paltockes, if you be merrie then immodeſt, if modeſt then ſullen, if you keepe not companie then proude, if you keepe companie then light, if eaſilie caught then ouer kinde harted, and as ready to checke, if wiſely deſerring your choiſe then ouercruelly minded, and too tedious the ſute, if you will not be courted at all then diſdainefull, if any be admitted to conference then ſuſpected, if you bee rich they woo your dowries, if poore they way not your vertues, if beautifull they couet the fleece, if not they caſt off the Croone, if ſoft ſprighted they doubt new Competitors, if ſharpe witted they dreade old Copeſmates, if you tell them of profit they terme you Prattlers, but ſhoulde you bee ſilent when they are careleſſe, then will not they be tõgue-tied to cal you bad Huſwifes: in a word (I wot not with what furie moued) in all thinges they oppoſe themſelues to your vertues.

But I may ſay, and ſay truely, that next to the gods

we are moſt beholding to womē: for if to be borne into the world be a benefit, euen from their ſtrained wombes wee are proceeded: if to be foſtered vp, and that with their blood be kindneſſe, euen from their ſtretched pappes was it ſucked: if charie attendance (being of our ſelues noyſome, and helpeleſſe) be charitie, euen with their often filed handes were we cheriſhed: what ſhall I ſay? more worketh in vs to our behooſes, the nature of our mothers, then the influence of the Planets: for admit we the operation of Luna in our feeble Infancie, of Mercurie in our vnſtable Childhood, of Venus in our effeminate Adoleſcencie, of Sol in our flouriſhing Youth, of Mars in our ſtayed Manhood, of Iupiter in our temperate Senioritie, and of Saturne in our decripite olde age, or the dominion, or conſtellation of the twelue Signes, or any the Starres at al times, yet who knoweth not, that euerie of theſe ſucceſſiuly continew but their ſeaſons? neither is there any ineuitable neceſſitie, others then our owne ſenſitiue appetites, that doth violently drawe vs to the ſeuerall diſpoſitions of the Planets, for the Wiſe man is ſaide to gouerne the Starres.

But the vnſeparable operation, and naturall inclination of the Mother towards her Sonne, is a diſpoſition vnremoueable, and without ende: for can ſhe forget a part of her owne fleſh? no, but euen from the Spring of our Infancie, to the Sommer of our youth, the Harueſt of our Manhood, the Winter of our Old-age, yea after our funerals, and in our Children, her tender care of vs doth rather increaſe, then in any part deminiſh: ſo that (if we remember our ſelues) vnrequitable are the dueties, wher in we are moſt deeply indebted to our mothers: and yet many times, ſuch is our vnthankfulneſſe, that what they prodigally deliuered without meane, we nigardly repaie with ſcanced meaſure, and ſuch is oftē the corrupt nature of man, that where he oweth moſt, there he loueth leaſt: beſides which of their cōmendatiō remaineth as followeth.

Cap.

Cap. 39.

IT is moreouer to be noted, that Nature whom we must graunt to be perfit in all her Actions, foreseeing that without the helpe of women, the depopulatiō of the world woulde follow, to the intent therefore that men should be the more capable of their Imbracementes, hath infused throughout the whole linaments of their delicate bodies, and sweete faces such aboundance of beautie, that we seeing the excellencie of the same, to shine in our eyes like precious Carbuncles, hoisting vp the sayles of our hope, and drawing neere vnto them in the Ships of our hartes, become after many pleasant perils, first Marchantes, & then Maisters of such inualuable Jewels: though not at all times, with such speede as we woulde, yet with a more profitable sute then wee wish: without crossing is no cowning, by the labour some acquiring of women, wee are, say I, not a little profited in valour, and wisedome: for when they haue thus set our teeth amorously on edge, it standeth vs vppon artificially to whet our wittes: that our tongues hunt for eloquence in presence to delight, and our heades for inuentions, in absence to deserue: in our dealings we then must be circumspect, in diet temperate, and in apparell decent, with all which loue doth furnishe vs, and by all which loue is furthered. Adde also hereunto, that their loue teacheth vs to be valiant in Chiualrie, and venterous in Armes, to thinke feare a fault, and nothing impossible, to exercise all things, to enterprise most thinges, and in somewhat to be exquisite.

May be it so (which may be denied) that by wooing we are losers, yet doth it follow (which all must confesse) that by wining we are gainers: who attaining at ỳ length to be possessours of our coueted prises, cōmand in triūphwise our subdued Troubles, to follow like chained Captiues our victorious Chariots, yea and by how much greeuous

weaccounted the foughten Conflict, by ſo much the more glorious we eſteeme the fulfilled Conqueſt

But now if I, that am in deede a freſh-man, & bad Sophiſter, ſhould in hearing of thoſe who haue proceded Maſters in that Art, reaſon of the Byding, the Bedding, and many other Meriments inſident to Mariage, I ſhoulde proue my ſelfe a Dotrell, in compariſon of a Doctor: for Practitioners not Puples muſt occupie Pulpits, and to frame a Commentarie, that cannot make a Conſtruction, were to propound a *Probleme*, & to expound the ſame with an Oracle: wherefore omitting to Paraphraſe vpon ſuch miſteries, I will (Ladies) after an *Epitome* of the great bleſſinges of wedlocke, make a ſparing Cõcluſion of your vnſpeakable Commendations.

That the gods them ſelues, were the firſt Inſtitutors of Marriage it is probable, that therby our fleſhly Appetits be not only qualified with a more ciuil Coiture, thẽ might ſeeme brutiſh and offenſiue to nature, but alſo the worlde multyplied with a legitimate, no baſtardly Propagation muſt be graunted: but (which is more) marriage, no doubt, being a thing miraculouſly confirmed, through a mutuall partiſipation of whatſoeuer they poſſeſſe, and free Communitie of their own perſons, being as I may terme it, by Tranſplantation two in one fleſh, worketh one & the ſame will, wiſh, loue, liking, or diſliking, affection, defection, & affliction betwixt the man, & woman coupled in Matrimony: eſpecially the wife, by a more inſcrutable, pliant, zealous & profound forwardneſſe in Conſent is at all aſſaies, & in all things flerable to the nature, conditions, diſpoſitions, will and eſtate of her huband: in proſperitie a partner of his wealth, in aduerſitie a partaker of his woe, and in both a comfortable companion: in health ſhe filleth him with delightfull ſollace, in ſickneſſe ſhee followeth him with duetifull ſuccour, and in all thinges is a conſtant coſſellor, and concealor of his purpoſes: bee he poore or be he rich with her vertue, dowrie, or diligence ſhee increaſeth

ſeth and maintaineth his ſubſtance: to the noble, and innoble ſhee beareth heires to inherite their diſcending poſſeſſions, Sonnes to eterniſe their deceaſed Progenitors, and Children to comforte their diſtreſſed Parents. In a word, it is commonly ſeene that being vnmaried, we are inconſtant in thoughts, and incontinent in workes, or if neither of both, yet ſuſpected in eyther of both, but being maried, of contented mindes and conuenient maners, or if not ſuch as we ſhould, yet vnſuſpected for ſuch as we are: becauſe mariage not only is pleaſant, and affable to the good, but alſo doth credite and countinaunce euen the bad.

Ah ſweet Ladies, no longer would I liue than I honour you, but ſooner would I die than I ſhall hate you: otherwiſe old age, ſhould draw my head to ioyne with my feete, and a loathed life make mee glad with my nailes to ſcrape mine owne graue, and neuertheleſſe ſtill to liue in ſorrow, rather than to die a Recreant in your ſeruice: and that I ſpeake this for faſhion, or flatterie, or that I groũd mine opinion vpon an vnperfect foundation let not any imagine: for Nature it ſelfe by an vnrepelable lawe, doth inioine vs to your loue, and amongeſt men by a lawdable cuſtome, your honouring, hallowing, reuerenſing, & protecting is eſpecially prouided for.

To conclude therefore, ſuche as are priers after the ſmal, or natural faults, eſcapes, and infirmities of womẽ, I wiſh neuer to be partakers of the profite, pleaſure, and bountie of women: and no doubte, I haue alreadie my wiſhe, for not to excuſe the firſte, is not to vſe the latter.

Cap. 40.

BRother (qd. Abynados) I commend your ſkill, in that you haue choſen the better ſide, framing your anſwere in a place dangerleſſe of a Replie: and the rather for that

by long continuing your matter, you haue I coniecture, discontinued our memories: as for your Methode it is sufficient, because your meaning may bee supposed: neither doe I thinke you flatter women in least, because I know you fauour them in earnest.

Indeede (qd. Atys) in that we be brethren, by your owne shifte you maye the easilier search me: but had I coueted praise, as the same is cõtrarie to my pretence, yet brotherhood is a bad colour to Bracerie, for had I sollicited any to support my sayings, of all others I woulde not haue suborned your soothings: not onely because of our nere aliance, but (which your self haue confessed) because of your *non. san* memorie: for how shoulde a blinde man iudge of colours, or any thinke you to deliuer a good sentence, hauing so grosse a censure: yet well did you in not arrogating to your own shittle wit, had you not derogated from the sensible capacitie of others.

Amongst brethren, Friends, Aduocates, and Orators (qd. Tymætes) it is common to haue like brawling, without buffiting, & bickering without blowes: and in such quiet quarrels bread through emulation, and not begone vpon enuie, the eares perhaps maye itche, and the tongue scratche, but with the sound ended all stomacke: for mine owne part Atys howsoeuer Abynados like, or mislike of the matter, what I cannot amende by wordes, I admit by signes, and therefore without more, in token that I gladlye gratifie your Commendation as concerning women, I passe my full Consent therein, vnder this Seale of Confirmation: and therewithall her fastened a sweet kisse vpon Aphrodite her soft cherie lips.

This same Lady was daughter to the king of *Cilicia*, now vsurper of *Lydia*: whose fortune, had it bene proportionable to her feature, should haue left her lagge to none in blisse, as shee out-went all others in beautie: her loue towards Tymætes, though it appeared later then her brother Xenarchus his friendship, yet had not that ran the faster

ſter, this might haue giuen the turne: but for that her loue might not out-ſtrip his friendſhip, I leaue the Lorſe indifferent, and Timantes thus far an happie man in friend, and louer.

Then Aphrodite with bluſhing cheekes, and ſoftelye voice ſaide to Tymætes, Sir would I cauell I might ſaye your Confirmation to be voidable, no print appearing of the impreſſion: and for you to alleage the ſeale ouer ſofte, or the ware too hard wil not be pleadable: neither to haue ſealed before witneſſes ſhall, I feare me, fall out for Atys his ſecuritie, or your and my ſafetie: for though my ſelfe am not ſquaimiſh of your orderly kiſſes, yet it maye bee, there is one gone out that wil be quarilous for ſuch open kindneſſe. You are not (I trow) to learn, that loue and Principalitie brooke no Copartners, and therefore Mazeres as touching me, no Competitour, howbeit in your loue no Corriuall: but to win Atlas his Apples behoueth charmes for Dragons, to woo Ladies in *Molloſſe* ſops for Cerberus, & to conuay Aphrodite into *Lycia* warineſſe in *Lydia*.

So turning to Atys, with a more audible voice ſhe ſayeth, I haue heard, that whilſt the vainglorious Crow opened her beake to ſing, ỳ flattering For obtained a booty by ſlight, but if you (Atys) haue let ſlip for the like ſuppoſe, you muſt leape ſhort of the like ſucceſſe: in euery clownish Auditorie our praiſe, or diſpraiſe is made ſo common a Text, that if Venus be at the toungs end, Cupid is at the tailes ende: yea ſometimes from her boſome they leape ſo deepe into his belly, that their haſty ingreſſe hath hardly a regreſſe: thus I ſay Atys, the plentie of your Retorick hath bred a ſcarcitie of Regarders. What man, we can diſgeſt Porke, yet may you cloy vs with Pewits: ſay might you without ſhame, and ſweare maye I without ſinne, that women are not ſo preciſely good, as you pretend to make them, neither ſo perfitly badde, as I intende you meane them. I will aſke you a Queſ

But

But here alas, or euer she might adde, tion, the surplusage of the word Question, she was (good Lady) inforced to conclude a *Periodus*, not being come to the *Comma*: for (inuited to this bitter banquet by Mazeres, whose madding ielousie had hamered this mischief, as not disgesting such familiaritie, which contrary to his liking, had euen now passed betwixt Tymætes and Aphrodite) the cruell king her father, and a many his Seruaunts with vnsheathed swordes, and threatning lookes suddenlye rushe into the place, where this guiltlesse Company were thus securely chatting: who after many opprobrious speeches, hailing Tymætes, Atys, and Abynados from thence, cast them all three into a most vile dungion: where had not Aphrodite by stealth, with extraordinarie meate amended their ordinarie meales, they might haue abated their fatnesse with fasting, not fennell.

Cap. 41.

NEwes of Tymetes his immartial imprisonment, was anon conuaied into *Licia*, whereuppon the deprined King his father, accompanied also with his nephew, king Deipyrus, sodainly landed an huge Armie of *Lician* soldiours in *Lydia*, girting *Sardis* with a strong siege: howbeit the impregnable scituation of the strong walled Citie without, and the abundance of men, victuals, and Artilarie within, mighte haue discouraged the Besiegers to Assayle, as the same incouraged the Besieged to resist.

And therefore after two moneths, the barbarous vsurping king, as it were in despightfull ostentation to shew how little he forced or feared his enemies, causing Tymetes loden with yrons to appear on the walles, and wauing to the *Licians* as though he purposed a parlie, when the father of Tymetes was come within his hearing, he sayd.

Because Tymetes is the man (ye *Licians*) for whose in-

largement

largement youre Armies nowe occupie *Lydia*, if therefore his deliuerie may ſuffiſe, be not then hopeleſſe, for Tymętes ſhall you anon haue, although headleſſe: and if you ſhall determine to recompence me for the deed, thinke not but that the ſtouteſt in your Campe, ſhall die in my debt.

Herewithall three or foure Ruffens, whome he had appointed Inſtruments for that butcherie, fettle themſelues about their buſineſſe: Mazeres alſo proſecuting the murder to effect.

This hearing and ſeeing the King his Father, who as it were breathing out the ſorrowes of his ſoule, thus ſayeth: And maye not mine alreadie ſuſtained wronges, ſuffiſe to glut thy ſauadge woodneſſe, but wilte thou alſo adde the butcherie of my Sonne, my deare, and only Sonne: that the death of the Childe maye ſalute the deceaſe of the Parent: alas, doe not ſo, ſuffer thy crueltie to haue an ende, that my miſeries may haue ſome meane. Thy ſelfe hauing a Sonne, ſhouldſt be acquaynted with the tender affections of a Father: but if not therefore, yet know that my ſelfe was once in thy preſent Dignitie, and thy ſelfe art ignoraunte of thy following Deſtinie: wretche that I am, what is paſt my nowe aduerſitie maketh me to remember, as no doubt, what is to come thy nowe Proſperitie cauſeth thee to forget: thinke, think, the Heauens may one daye be to thee, and thy Xenarchus, ſuch and the ſame as preſentlye they are to mee and my Tymętes, and therewithall conſider, what wracke of felicitie would follow thee a Childleſſe Parent: O that thou wouldeſt, as in troth thou ſhouldeſt, applie this not impoſſible poſſibilitie to thy ſelfe and thine, then might I boldlye appeale from my ſelfe to thine owne ſentence, with aſſured hope of my Sonne his ſafetie.

If therefore, the example of my fall, the vncertaintie of thine owne Fortune, the Supplication of a King, the Peace of thy Countrie, the ſubmiſſion of a Foe, the

interceſſion of a father, the teares of an old man, the regard of Juſtice, or the innocencie of Timætes maye nowe preuaile, with my tõgue I proteſt it, with my hart I vow it, and mine Act ſhall performe it, that his raunſome ſhal be the reſignation of mine whole intereſt, to this my detained kingdome.

But if none of theſe, any of which might be of ſufficiencie, neither the Gods that ſhall puniſh the tyrannie, nor the world that ſhall ſpeake of thine infamie, nor the blood that ſhall crie for vengeaunce againſt thee, nor thine own guiltie conſcience that ſhall at laſt accuſe thee, if none of theſe I ſay, can worke thy flintie hart to a fleſhlye ſubſtaunce, yet knowe that the *Lycians* not without the aſſiſtaunce of other nations, will, I am ſure, vow the laſt drop of their deareſt blood to reuenge ſuch inhumane crueltie: yea pittie thine owne people that ſhall buy his death ouer dearely.

Cap. 42.

When thus much was ſpoken in vaine (for Tyrannts are the leſſe tractable, by how much they are intreated) Tymætes, rather dying in the greef of his father, then dreading the death wherewithal himſelf was threatned, with much adoe ſpake as followeth.

I am (deare father) inioyned an ouer greeuous pennance, that being patiently reſolued vpon a ſimple death, doe now alſo by your impatience liue a dying life, whereby my death is rather doubled than deferred: but (which is more, and which is worſe) muſt I alas, in this extremitie, muſt I hunt for comfortable ſayinges to appeaſe your diſcouraging ſorrowes? You are not I knowe aduiſed howe you enuie my good happe, becauſe not aduertiſed how you hinder my ſweete hope, whiche hope is death, and Death the Salue for all ſorrowes, and the Deliuerer of the immortall Soule from the Priſon of this mortall

tall bodie: neither is it the ill Death but the well dying wee are to account of: for not the stifling Halter of Hempe, or sinking pillow of downe, doe in any thing help or hinder our passage to Heauen.

Bee not greeued in that youre Sonne is punished, but bee gladde in that hee hath not deserued suche punishmente: were I guiltie, perhaps my death should disquiet you the lesse, when in that I am innocente you ought to bee quieted the more: as Nature doeth moue you to lamente the death of your Sonne, so let reason learne you the qualitie of your Seede whiche is mortall: if because I am young you wishe my life mighte bee prolonged, I aunswere in not dying olde my Sorrowes are abridged: if you can-not (as perhappes you doe not) disgest the bloodye Triumphe of your dishonourable Enemie, than doe not (as no doubte you doe) double his Ambition, with the booteleſſe expence of your ouer humble petitions: for thinke not that this Tyraunte, who can not lengthen his owne dayes one momente, canne of himselfe shorten my date one minute, but that the Gods (for so I hope) readie to accept of my soule, haue made him an instrument to separate it from the body.

Wherefore (good Father) seeing that death is both necessarie, and also ouertaketh vs all of necessitie, seeing I auarre the one by triall, neyther maye you auoyde the other by trauarse, with the reuerente duetie of a Sonne I require it, and withoute the partiall affection of a Father I beseeche you to graunt it, that youre impatience maye not driue those bloodie teares to my harte, whiche (not with a desperate minde I speake it) this butcherlye penaunce shall neuer drawe from mine eyes.

More might he not be suffered to speake, but his head being stroken from off his shoulders, was togeather with his bleeding bodie, at commaundement of the Tyraunt

caſt ouer the walles, amongſte the ſorrowfull *Licians* to the view of his ſowning Father: which dead body of Tymętes was anon ſolemnlye interred, in the accuſtomed Sepulchers of his Auncestours ſometimes Kings of *Lydia*, nere adioyning to *Sardis*.

Cap. 43.

WYnter was now at hand, and the *Licians* perceauing themſelues rather wasted, then their enemies wearied, prepared therefore to breake vp their Siege, intending at the next Spring to haue returned, with all the forces they might possibly leuie.

But in this meane while at *Sardis* ariued Xenarchus, ſonne to the Tyraunt, and Friend, as before, to Tymætes, who after intelligence had of Tymętes his death, and Mazeres his Treccherie, desirous to be dead with the one, and quit with the other, he attended from thenceforth opportunitie for both: and that ſo, as the *Licians* themſelues before their departure might bee ey-witneſſes, that euen Death had not yet diſſolued their friendſhip: and lo, how occaſion offered it ſelfe to this enterprise.

Aphrodite his Siſter that shee might there ſpende her teares, where ſhe dared to haue ſhead her blood, had (not regarding the daunger of the incamped enemie) eſcaped out of *Sardis*, and amongſt the *Lydian* Sepulchers was eſpied pitifully to paſſionate her ſelfe, ouer the Tombe of Tymętes.

Now to reſcue her out of that place and peril, Mazeres that for her loue would haue laboured euen Dis himſelfe, deſired Xenarchus his aſſiſtaunce: the match was made, and only they two alike weponed & vnknown to any, iſſue out of the Citie to fetche home (as was pretended) Aphrodite.

The ſelfe ſame day alſo, had Xenarchus ſecretly practiſed the deliuerie of Atys and Abynados out of Priſon, and

and through a priuie vault issuing out of the kinges palace, conueied them into the Subburbes: who not minding rashly to fall into the handes of the incamped *Licians*, had now hid themselues amongest the aforesaide Sepulchers.

When Xenarchus, and Mazeres drewe neere to this place, Xenarchus suddenly betooke him to his weapon, & to Mazeres, demaunding the cause of his so doing he maketh this answere:

What Mazeres, dost thou make a question, as ignorãt of a quarrell? or thinkest thou to excuse in wordes, a treason already executed in workes? could thy loue towards my Sister make thee disloyall to my friend: and shall not the faith I owed to my friende make thee mine enimie: yes Mazeres yes, though vntill nowe I haue dissembled my griefe for his death, yet this opportunitie happning, I will not longer suspende reuenge for his wrong: howbeit so would I be reuẽged, that neither wish I to be conquerour, nor yet would I be conquered, onely that we both die of mutuall wounds I desire it, and thou doest deserue it. I know thy courage is haughtie, and my quarrell honest, be therefore venterous in this, as thou art valiant in all thinges else, and condiscende to ioyne in so knightlike a Combate, with so indifferent a Combattant, who ouercomming, or being my selfe ouercommed do assure thee of this comfort, that thy selfe art the last man shall see me lyuing: the reason hereof (if thou seekest a reason) is, the soule of Xenarchus at once laboureth to salute the ghost of Tymetes, an withall to keepe an Obbit to him with thy life, by whose only meanes his death was prosecuted, and against whom his blood cryeth vengeance.

To excuse my selfe (replyed Mazeres) by loue, were to accuse loue of homicide, to argue against such your friendship, were the rather to agrauate your enmitie, and to denie the chalenge, were to distrust mine owne manhoode, so that in excusing I should accuse as I will not, in

perſwading I ſhould not diſſwade as I woulde, and in agreeing to you I ſhould diſagree with you as I muſt: but alas my Lord, aduiſe your ſelfe better, and deale not ſo outragiouſly with him that friendly, not fearefully beſeecheth you of patience: for if the loſſe of my life might reuiue Tymætes, or pleaſure you, Tymætes ſhould liue, and you be pleaſed, mine owne handes ſhould haſten it, your weapon not haſard it: But ſeeing it may not ſo bee, or if my ſubmiſſiue wordes may not preuent your vntreatable furie, then know Xenarchus, that Mazeres is a Knight, no Coward: but were I a Cowarde, yet Cowardes in like extremities be deſperatly valiant, and being inforced to fight, naturally will rather kill then be killed: when, if it ſhould ſo proue (as in fight the victorie is vncertaine) that by euill hap you perriſh one my weapon, then alas, howſoeuer it pleaſeth you to flout me, or feare me with the promiſed comfort of your death, wherin I ſhould conceiue nothing leſſe then comfort, & where of againe and againe I intreate you not to inforce the occaſion, you may aſſure your ſelfe of this comfort from me, that your deade bones ſhall more perſecute me, then your liuing body can puniſh me, the one I may not flie, the other I doe not feare: the reaſon is (if you demaund a reaſon) if my death be not the priſe of your blood, yet muſt I of neceſſitie forſake *Lydia*, the which to leaue were intollerable, & ſo forgo Aphrodite, whom not to loue is impoſſible.

Now when Xenarchus would admit no excuſes, others then by Combate to diſcide the diſcorde, the two knights ſo valiantly giue the charge ech on the other, that whilſt both ſtrike, both ſeeme rather to ſhrinke with the blowes then to ſhun the weapons, either of them ſhewed enough of courage, neither of them were to ſeeke of cunning, and fret more with ſcorne to be wounded, then feele the ſmart of their woundes.

In few, after many breathings, Xenarchus diſaduaun-

taging.

raging himselfe by his ouer fearce & desperat fight receiued a wound, whereof fainting he falleth to the earth, and then perswading himselfe of no other hope then present death, he charitably forgaue wofull & wounded Mazeres the deede: & constantly imbracing him indeauouring all in vaine to giue succour, desired to be conueied vnto Tymætes his Tombe, there to offer vp his last gaspe, a sacrifice to his friends ghost: in performance of which his request, Mazeres shewed himselfe no lesse dutifull, then dolefull.

Cap. 44.

WHilst perplexed Aphrodite (disheuiled as shee was) washed her Louers Tombe with her lamentable teares, bewayling his vntimely destinie, and esteeming the date of his owne life ouer dilatorie, lifting vp her flowing eyes she espyed Mazeres, supporting thetherwards the imbrued body of her dying brother: at sight whereof, when wepings gaue passage to wordes, shee thus cryeth out.

Now woe, and out alas, woe is me forspoken Aphrodite, how happeth it my deare brother, that I viewe thee a second buriall: and what see I more? doest thou Mazeres, mischieuous Mazeres by a new murder adde to my liuing martirdom? if thou, I say, if thou the tormentor of me, and Traitor to mine, either in respect of ỹ loue thou pretendest to owe me, or in reueng of the hate I protest euer to beare thee, wilt shew me pity by being pitiles, for somuch as the gods seeme deafe and not to heare me, and the destinies dull and not to helpe me, vse once more thy murtherous weapon to dispatch me of life, that otherwise may neuer be eased of griefe: oh how aptly in one Tombe maist thou bestow three murthers: leaue not (alas) leaue not hapless Aphrodite so vtterly helpeles, that also present death be exempted her succour.

As Xenarchus (for yet he liued) with fainting tounge endeuored

endeuoured to pacifie his ſiſter, and acquite his inforſed foe Mazeres of his ſelfe procured death, Atys and Abynados hyding them ſelues (as before) amongeſt the ſepulchers, and hearing thoſe well known names, lamentable tearmes, and the voice of out-crying Aphrodite, partly to aſſiſt her vnto whom they ſuppoſed Mazeres to offer force, partly to reuenge the death of the curtious knight Tymætes, and withall to be meete with Mazeres for their owne priuate quarrels, as not a little affrighthed at the noiſe ran forth to ſee what had hapned.

But when they perceiued their late deliuerer Xenarchus, to lie there aliue more then halfe deade, and by him ſtanding their late betraier Mazeres ſmoaking in bloode, without any further words, they fearſly ran vpon twiſe-wounded Mazeres, plying him with woundes to whome it wel pleaſed to dy: who alſo being thus ſpead of his deaths wound, & aiming with his dying eyes to gaſping Xenarchus, did with him yeald vp the ghoſt, either in the boſom of the other.

This new occurrant gaue to Aphrodite freſh occaſion, thus to continue her former lamentations, in theſe words:

What, doeſt thou yet liue (Aphrodite) long ſince the beginner, and not yet the ender, or at the leaſt wiſe the fourth actor in this vnfiniſhed Tragedie? O my deare brother Xenarchus, and (which art more deerer to mee then a brother) my ſweete Tymetes, content your ſelues, yea a verie little while be contented, with theſe waſted teares, the whole remaine that continuall weepings haue left me, & with theſe cold & comfortles kiſſes, the laſt that euer Aphrodite ſhal giue you. Neither thinke thou Mazeres, that I deeme thee vtterly vnworthy my weping, that (which hath vndone vs all) diddeſt eſteeme me altogether worthy thy woing, I cannot but lament thee deade, that lyuing could neuer loue thee.

Which ſaide, beſtowing two kiſſes, on the two Corſes, and two hundred on the watered Marbell that incloſed

Tymætes

Tymętes ſhe forthwith entred the *Lician* campe, and careleſſe of her own ſafety, ruſhing into the Pauilion of ẏ two kinges her fathers enimies, when they rather gased on her beautie, then geſſed of her buſineſſe ſhee diſcloſed her ſelfe: and (as much as in her lay) ſtirreth them vppe to reuenge vppon her Tymętes his death, for whoſe onely loue hee had forgone life: Aprodite (ſaith ſhee) is as deare to her Father, as was Tymętes to his, and therefore the reuenge though it be ſmale, yet it is ſomewhat.

In the meane time whilſt ſhe yet ſpake, in came Atys and Abynados, reporting the pittifull ſpectacle then to be ſeene at the Tombe of Tymætes: to the view whereof the Kinges and Captaines hyed, and after them Aprodite followed. But ſhe perceiuing the gratious father of Tymętes to be ſo farre off, from ſeeking ſuch reuenge for the death of his Sonne, that he did not onely bewaile bitterly the deade bodies of Xenarchus, and Mazares, but ſpake to her ſo comfortably as if ſhee had bene his owne daughter, being now the rather ouercome with the ſurcharge of this kinde ſorrowe, ſtanding a while ſpeechleſſe, and anon ſinking downe vppon the deade bodies, did (good Ladie) without any violente acte finiſhe her life, not vnlamented for, euen of her Fathers enimies.

The nexte daie three coſtlie Hearſes were prouided for the three deade bodyes, and whileſt the buriall rights were with much buſineſſe in doing at the tragicall Tombe of Tymętes (for all foure were beſtowed in one Tombe) the beſeiged Tyrante, not yet knowing what had chaunced, as he ſtoode on the walles of the Citie, muſed at the greate ſolemnitie then in hande by the Beſeigers. But when (after enquirie made) hee vnderſtoode the ſame to be the Funeralles of Xenarchus and Aphrodite his two children, and of Mazeres his famoſed friende, he preſently fell into a deſperat freuzie buſily

seeking, in that his madnesse, for weapons whereon to perish.

Whereof being preuented, and shut vp safe (as they thought) in his Chamber, the Tyrant impacient of life, when all other meanes failed, swallowed down his throte red burning Coales: & after he had languished certaine dayes in horrible anguish, dyed to the contentment of the most or all, that liued to the comfort of a few or none. *Sardis* and therewith whole *Lydia*, after the death of the Tyrant, what through the remisse negligence of the *Cilician* Garrisons, who being left without a Gouernour would easily admit no gouernement: what through the ready diligence of the Citizens, who gladly laboured to restore their Countrie from forraine seruitude to wonted freedome: and what through the politicke conduct of Atys and Abynados, who in the dead night brought the *Lician* Armies into the Citie, through the same vault whereby themselues had (as before) escaped out of the Citie, was now possessed by the good and rightfull king Tymetes his father.

Who being reestablished in his royall dignitie, did anon with indiferent eares, and and vpright sentence daily determine the Controuersies of his people: to which godly exercise, the former warres and troubles, did furnish him with more then sufficient of vngodly matter, leauing in manner all things in a confused estate: for new Conquestes do commonly abrogate olde Customes: and when the Soldiour putteth vp his sworde, the Aduocate then purseth vp the coyne.

Amongst many other Controuersies, and complayntes that came then in questiõ, this one presently to be handled in the discourse following, I esteeme not vnworthy recitall.

Opheltes

Opheltes.

Calamus ſeptimus.

Cap. 45.



He King in walking vppe and downe his Pallace, perceiued an homely Country-man, making eſtē proffers to haue ſpoken ſomwhat vnto him, but euermore, at the verie puſhe, fearfully ſtaying at ẏ toungs ende, his purpoſed wordes, which when the good King had a longe time together obſerued, him ſelfe comming to the ſillie man, and minding to cut off the ſimple ſilence of the ſame his timerous Sutour, ſpake to him as followeth.

Father (qd. he) mine owne experience teacheth mee, that the Countrie is ouercombersome for vs that bee Courtiors, and thy preſence in this place ſhoweth that the Courte is onercurious to you that be Countrie-men: howbeit let not our Courtlie ſtatelineſſe, which we account conuenient for the place, out-daſhe thy Countrie bluntneſſe, which we eſteeme kindely to the perſon: but if thou haſt anie thing to ſay, let me then vnderſtand who hath wronged thy right, that can, and will vndertake to right thy wrong.

When the king with this encouragement, had ſet the poore-mans tongue at libertie, Philargus (for ſo was hee called) framed his complaint in this order.

LEt not my gracious Lorde (sayth Philargus) take offence at the boulde intrusion of so base a person, your Maiesties Subiect, who not finding any one friend to preferre my Sute to your Highnesse, am my selfe inforced to bee the preferrer, and pleader of a most true accusation against a most false offendor, whose loftie countenance being much, doth carrie out his lewde conscience being more.

For knowe (gratious Lorde) that I finding mine abilitie insufficient to fee an Aduocate to attempte an Action, much lesse to holde wagge with so wealthie a defendant as is mine Aduersarie, indeuoured by personall petition to moue, if it had bene possible, my owne pytifull cause before the pittylesse Magistrates: but (alas) as if distressed pouerty, had bene ouer small punishment to mee otherwise oppressed with wronges, at their verie doores, I founde a certayne scornefulnesse to infecte euen their Porters: of whome after long businesse, and some-tymes a bribe getting licence to enter the Gates, againe at the Skreenes began my seconde sute, both coyer for intertaynement, and costlyer for iustice: for wanting greater giftes to offer, I found the smaller grace to obtayne, what my Sute? yea both Sute, and speech, and hope to speede. And (which is more) the Seruing-men, Chaumberlaines, and Doore-keepers of these great men, or Magistrates, looking for more cappes and knees then mine vnnurtured education could redily affoorde, receiued mine obeisance, without regarde of my businesse: yea they that tooke it for a countenaunce to plucke off the bootes of their Maister, though it a discredit to haue conference with mee so poore a miser. But in trifling the time in thus speaking of the bastard pride of these base braue Fellowes, being (in deed) but Waspes in comparison of Bees who though they buze fearefully, render sometimes honny, I may seeme in friuilous by-matters prolitious to your Maiesty.

After

After many loftie lookes, and churlish cherkes of these lybbing Groomes, leauing the comfortlesse houses, I attended my times in the cold streetes: but now also, whether it were that I met the Maiestrates in merrie talke with my betters, my lamentation came then out of season to interrupt their laughters: or that no suche thing happened, yet at the least the very Mule-keepers would shoulder mee to silence: or if himselfe chaunced to looke ouer the shoulder (perhaps offended with my monefull plaints) it was either to dismisse me as if Bacchus should answere Codrus, or else to directe mee from Ixion his Wheele to Belides their Tubbes, or (as I might tearme it) from himselfe that did terrifie mine eyes with lookes, to others that should teare out my hart with Lawe: and yet in the ende nothing at all done, but I vndone: my purse in all thinges making to their Lawe, but their Lawe in nothing to my purpose: so that if Hell might haue an Oels Hell, my selfe, Wretche, euen on earth haue suffered that Hell

In the end with importunate plying, some of them shaked me off with the Visour of pitie, appointing a daye wherein to heare my cause: but the appointment is vnperformed, the day past, and the hearing yet, and I feare mee euer to come: and why? Not because I wante sorrow whereof to complaine, but Siluer wherewith to corrupt. And (O good Gods) that men should with suche peeuish euasions nourishe their palpable errors, because mine Aduersarie is riche, and Worshipfull, some make it a consequent, that therefore mine Accusation is rashe, and wrongful: so that these men in respecte of their mutuall clawing one of an other, are not vnlike may I saye to Mules, or rather to cruell Beares with whome amongest themselues, biting is barred: but in respecte of the iustice they should doe vs, not vnlike to the Beaste Hiena within whose eye is contained a Pretious Stone, which neither they for fiercenesse will departe with, nor

we for feare dare attempt to recouer.

Thus mightie men speake the word, and al heare them, when miserable wretches shead their teares, but not any help thē: our Plaints must be, Should, & Would, because men ỳ are vnder-rule, but their Pleas are, Shal, & Wil, because men that can ouer-rule. Our greeuous affectiōs fatigate dull sences, and tire Capacities, but their golden Dum-showes are effectual euen to dimme sightes, and deaffe eares: one and the same course is in vs dilatorie, in them orderly: to vs a Dimission, to them a Decree: for Iudgements against them haue they Errors with them: for Sentences Repreeues, and for Repreeues Pardons. But what alas doe we (if we doe aught at all) then seare Hydra her heades, and sweate in Hercules his Perils: plucking vpon vs twentie troubles, by proceeding to one Triall: and though they eate vs as bread, and sell vs for shoes, yet vppon whome should we complaine that either careth, or not correcteth: the Aduersarie so he way down right, wayeth not at all the wrong: the Lawyer so hee hath a fee, disgesteth the foyle, and fathereth the crime on the cause, the Magistrate he sayth, *Nolo me tangere, & angere*, least the incarnate God proone an vntimelye Diuell.

Thus (may it please your Maiestie) when all were tried, and I was tired, and that they lacked pitie, and I likely to perish, I was by good happe aduertised by some that spake as they spead, to appeale from those officious persons, or adiourning Maiestrates that heare not without hire, to the Court and Nobility there who heare such Sutors with more expedition, and helpe them with lesse expences.

This aduise made me hardy, but the accident thereof maketh mee happie, in that your highnesse vouchsafeth the hearing of it in your owne person, which (vnworthie wretche) I durst not so much as in thought to haue hoped for.

Opheltes(moſt gratious Soueraigne) Opheltes more fortunate to dignities, than faithfull in his dealinges, is the onely man giuing occaſion to this my Complainte: whome being preſent in your Court, maye it pleaſe your Maieſtie perſonally to cal to this Controuerſie, that hearing how, and wherin I ſhall charge him by accuſation, he may(I would he might)cleare himſelfe by aunſwere: for rightfull Cauſes feare not indifferent Trials.

Opheltes was then called, who appearing, Philargus thus proceeded.

Cap. 47.

THe *Cilician* Tyrãt lately vſurping in this your kingdome(moſt gratious Lord)purſuing, for what offence I know not, the death of this vngratefull Gentleman, inforced him for ſauegard of his life, ſecretly as a Fugitiue to ſkulke in euery corner: in his wandring he hapned(vnhappily may I ſay)vppon my poore Cottage, vnto whom vtterly vnknowne to me, and the cloathes on his backe ſcarcely couering his bare, I gaue for very pitie, ſuche intertainment as my ſmall abilitie woulde then ſuffer, plucking off his olde ragges, and putting on him newe Ruſſets.

Now whether it were, that deſpaire to regaine the eſtate he lately had forgon made him reſolute, or feare to goe farther and ſpeede worſer, diligent, or that neceſſitie made him vertuous being naturally vitious, I know not, but this I found, that ſhortly he fetled himſelfe with ſuch towardneſſe to our countrie Affaires, and homely fare, that the beſt huſband-man was not more cunning at his worke, nor the worſt Hine leſſe choiſe of his meat: ſo that finding him more diligent than a Seruaunt, and no leſſe dutifull than a Sonne, by the one I receiued commoditie, in the other I conceiued comfort: ſuch was poore Opheltes who then did not ſhame to be my ſeruaunt, but ſuche

is

is not prosperous Opheltes that now doth skorne to be my sonne in law. And yet, though his present Honour hath altered his former honestie, this is the man, and the selfe same Opheltes, vnto whome not hauing a Coate to his backe, Coyne in his purse, Foode for his belly, or Couerture for his head, I gaue both Apparell, Monie, Meate, and Harbour.

And more than so, I haue, or rather, I feare me, I had but one only Childe a Daughter, whome Opheltes long wooed, at length wone, and with my consent did wedde: howbeit, wretched Wenche, many a lustie Youth, and riche Francklines sonne in seeking her beautie (such as it was) togethers with her inexorable loue, lost their vnregarded labour: only Opheltes had the happe to make her an vnhappie Wife. Yea, my dotage extended yet a degree farther, so well did I thinke of the man, that vtterlye dispossessing my selfe, I wholie possessed him of mine intiere substaunce: neither did I soone recant what now too late I repent, but for the time was rather tickled with a vaine ioye, seeing him honestly to encrease his wealth, hartily to intreate me, and husband-like to vse my Daughter his Wife.

But no extremitie hath eternitie as the worlde turned to better, so this Wretche changed to worser: for no sooner was the Tyraunt, his Foe, deade, and your Maiestie, his Friend reseazed of your Roiall Diademe, but that he suddenlye made sale of almost all that was ours, and by your Highnesse meanes, and my monie recouered his own: since which time much haue we heard of Opheltes nowe the exquisite Courtier, but nothing at all of Opheltes the late expert Carter: pardon me (I beseeche your Maiestie) that notwithstanding all other iniuries, woulde not thus speake to his disgrace, did hee not still prosecute mee with Disdaine, whiche euen Wretches disgest not.

There is in this Citie a stately and secrete Courtizan called

called Phęmonoe, a faire dame in countinance, but a foule diuell in conuersation, aboūding in riches, but abandoned of honestie, whose lasciuious dalliances (as since my repaire hither I haue bene tolde, and my selfe in part caune testifie) hath so farre estranged Opheltes from the dutie of an husbande, that by circumstances it may be intended, he hath not so much as once remembered his Wife: vnto whom since his departure, hee hath not vouchsafed succor, sight, or sending too.

Mine owne pinching neede, my Daughter her pitifull lamentations, and his vnkinde absence from vs both, rouzed vp mine aged Limbes, vnwieldye God wot for suche iournies, to seeke after him whome vnwitting to vs wee had lost, and vnwilling to himselfe in the ende I founde, (if to loose an egge, and fynde a Cockatrice may be termed a finding): for in very troth, Opheltes was so farre off from being founde the same Opheltes hee lately was, that when hee with many surly lookes, sterne wordes, and scoffing aunsweres had dismissed mee his presence, as a dispargement to his acquaintaunce, I for the tyme not trusting mine owne Eyes, began also to make a doubtfull pawse, in acknowledging an vndoubted person, vntill at length, I perceiued it to fare with me as with the poore Sparrow, that hatcheth her owne destruction. Wherefore minding with pacience to beare this wrong, and brooke my losse, I retourned home to my comfortlesse house: But here (alas) a greater woe had almost bereste me my wittes, Alcippe, woe am I, my Daughter Alcippe was lacking, and yet still is missing, shee (what else should I imagine) impatient of suche causeleste vnkindnesse, hath (God graunte my feare bee false) eyther secretlye wrought her own distruction, or else at the best, which is badde ynough, for euer abandoned me and mine house, as the memoratiue Springes that a freshe should flow to her sorrowes: by thus much your Maiestie maye conceaue more. If therefore this man his treacherous

Ingratitude deserueth to be punished, or mine vnsupportable Calamities be worthie of pitie, lette then Iustice recompence his mallace, and mercye releeue my myserie.

Philargus thus concluded, Opheltes could not auoid the Accusation, and the king in this wise proceeded to sentence.

Cap. 48.

I Haue (Philargus) giuen eare, and will anon giue ease, otherwise Iustice should be lesse, which ought to be so much, thā an *Intermediū* to my scepter: for whilst we rule with iustice we retaine the Tittles of kings, if not, we recouer the names of Tyrantes: in what therefore may we better discharge such our Charge, than in bridling the lawes of the mightie Oppressor, and in wiping teares from the eyes of the poore-man oppressed: for myne owne part I haue alwaies caried this opinion, that not to do iustice to others is to bring my selfe in danger of iudgemēt: knowing that the Prince ought to be the peace of his people, to the Orphant a parent, to the succourlesse a refuge, to good men a Protector, to ill men a terror, and to al men indifferent, who in respect of the cause shoulde reiecte the person, giuing to euery man that whiche is his, and for this cause are wee called Gods.

Euen this Preamble, Opheltes, ought to be fearefull to thee that art faultie to thy selfe: fie graceless man, fye, doth not almost euery post in my Palace flourish with these sayings: Doe as thou wouldest be done vnto: Shew pietie to thy Parents, and loue to thy kindred: Haue peace with men, and warre with Vices: Bee faithfu'l to thy friendes, and to all men iust: yet by so muche hath thy lewdnesse digressed from these Lessons, by how much vnlike workes differ from like worldes. But out of a legion I will only single a leafe, & those are, thine Ingratitude,

Dis-

Disdaine, and Adulteries.

If, Opheltes, I may say him vngratefull that is ready to receiue and careleſſe to repaye, and him graceleſſe whome the gentle loane of a Friend of a Debtor maketh an Enemie, what maye I then saye yll enough to thee? who diddeſt franckly receaue without loane, but doeſt falſely requite without loue: forgetting that Curteſies receaued by tale ſhould be returned in groſſe: that to bee gratefull for a little is a preparatiue to more: that ſtill to bee thankefull and confeſſe a benefite, is ſtill to ſtrike from off the ſkoare with our Benefactoures: and in troth, then to render thankes and giue faire ſpeeches, nothing is deliuered with leſſer charge, or recaued with greater acceptance.

But certain it is, a ſeconde Fiend hath brooded this firſt Furie, proude Diſdaine I meane, whome falſe Honour hath begotten in diſhonourable Baſtardie: for why, that ſame Honour hath an imperfect, or rather a prodigious bodye, wherein Humilitie is not ingrafted a member, whiche wanting, Promotion in an euill man is contrarye to Preferment, becauſe ryſing to Honour hee falleth from Uertue: and diſhonourable is Dignitie vſed vndiſcreetelye, but to bee glorious and not Vain-glorious, to haue power and to wante Pride, not with too muche auſteritie to prouoke hate, nor with too muche alacritie to procure contempt, but in all thinges to affecte a meane, is honourable in reſpecte of the man, and honeſt in reſpeecte of his maners: contrariwiſe, to haue the beſt degree and the baſeſt minde, the mateſtie of a Prince and the manners of a Peſaunt, a conquering tongue and a cowardlye hande, muche prattle and no proofe, outwarde grauitie and inwarde lightneſſe, a white heade, and a greene hart, high Authoritie, and vndiſcreet Gouernment make Honour moſterous, and contrarie to it ſelfe. To thee therfore, Opheltes, not vnaptly may I allude the

Fable of the Asse, who carrying on his backe the Image of Isis, and seeing the people to fall downe and worship, forgetting his holy burden supposed himselfe to be so honoured, and therefore in a brauerie began to yerke out at his Driuer, because as the rest he did not reuerence: but by that time his Maister had wel cudgeled his hide, the foolish Asse could then remember that to Isis, not to an Asse such honours appartained: euen so (Opheltes) thou that doest carie the Image, but not the Saint, the Visour of honour, but not the vertues of honour, to rebate from thy vainglorious conceit in carying of honorable Titles, art by greeuous correction with the Asse to be taught, ỳ worthie Titles without verteous Conditions are but as Pictures, in respect of the Persons. Think not much that so grosely I compare an Asse to a Gētleman, but know that such disdainfull Gentrie is worthye so worthlesse a comparison.

Could Philargus whom thou hast made poore with thy wrongs, poison thee with his words: or was his sight to thee a Serpēt, by whom thy self wert adopted a Sonne: If so (as thou shouldest think nothing lesse then so) then neither admitting benefites, and forgetting such aliance, tel me, Opheltes, is it sufferable thou shouldst be more cruell then a Monster, or lesse ciuile then a man: the fiercest Monster is familier with Monsters of the same kind, and what art thou for a mā, that thou shouldst be fastidious of the acquaintaunce of men? If thy brauery could not haue brooked his beggerie, at the worst, a secret Releefe might haue dispatched a bashful Begger: or if couitousnes harboureth thine hart, yet diddest thou degenerate from a Nygard, in not shewing a courteous looke where thou wouldest not bestow a charitable almes, seeing it is vsuall to euery pinche-penie rather to baile three Bonettes, then with one halfe-penie to aduauntage a Begger. But (wicked man) Disdaine it is that hath transformed thee from a man to Diuell, otherwise thou wouldest haue

remem-

remembred, that neuer any man lost by being humble, or that anie euer wone by being haughty: neither haddest thou forgotten, that as Poore-men haue want to exercise their patience, so Rich-men haue wealth to practise their charitie: which lacking, horrible is that Audiat wherein such a Rich-man is Accomptant.

Thou shouldest haue thought (and the rather by thine owne experience) that although wee flourish to day we may fall to morrow, and as Stage-players chaunge our partes from the Kinges Scepter to the Beggers Scrip: that the dispysed may rise, and the dispiser may fall: nate admit that Fortune, the common flatterer, should still fauour, yet what else gayneth the disdaynefull person: but this, that his superiours point at him in the streetes, his inferiours giere at him in corners, his equalles figuratiuely do ride him, and whosoeuer doth feare him not one doth friende him: the best way therefore to be rich is to dispise riches, & the meane to be glorious is to contemne glorie: for he that is neither proude in wealth, nor impacient in want, is poorely rich, and richly poore.

As for the pompe of the worlde, and the peoples fauour it is nothing else then a smoake, and vanishing Ayer: and as Snow beginneth and endeth in water, so mã, how bigly soeuer he braue it, began in earth and shall end where he began: seuen foote of ground is alowed to the King, and the like quantitie alotted to the Begger, and both the one and the other putrefie in the graue: though wee lacke nothing in sight, yet haue we nothing in certainety, seeing all thinges be transitorie, and our selues mortall. Where are the graue Senatours, the wealthy Cytizens, the wise Philosophers, the famous Oratours, the valiant Captaines, the deified Princes, and amiable Ladies? are they not all conuerted to vnsauerie Dongbils, or vtterly consumed to dust? do they not feede wormes in their Cofkens that breade wormes in their carcases? looke into their Sepulchers whether it bee possible to discerne the

Maister from the Slaue, the Rich-mā from the Begger, the King from the Subiect, the Champion from the Coward, the Ladie from the Beldam, the foule from the faire, or one from an other.

If such be our end, as such it is, if our felicities here be generally subiect to Casualities, & our flesh in the graue suffereth indifferently Corruption, with what reason thē do we dispise those through Pride, betwixt whom & vs is no differēce in the pit: sauing ỳ the poore leaue not behind him like contentions for their heyres, or carrie with them like pampered Carcases for the wormes, nor commonly like daungers for their soules, because vnto whom most is committed by him most is omitted, howbeit with him it is most rekoned: when if the account fall not out orderly, what doth it aduantage to haue liued in delices & dignities? when that which is mortall shalbe tumbled into a hole, & that which is immortal be tormented in hel: where the issue shall be not of Riches but of Righteousnes, not of costly Decking, but of charitable dealing. Thus seest thou, Opheltes, that in prosperitie to be secure is daungerous, but at any time to be disdainful odious, that honour standeth not without humilitie, that humilitie teacheth a man without ouersight to haue of himselfe an insight, & that in a poore-man it is gratefull, in a richmā glorious.

It resteth now of thine incestious and incontinent life, wherein I will be short, because the same wickednesse is generally had in such detestation, that shoulde not I reproue it, the beastlinesse of the fact it selfe might impugne it: for who is he that wanteth a parramtorie condēnation against a violator of marriage? Wherefore thus to conclude, seeing, Opheltes, that the now calme spreading thy sayles in the broadest Seas may not incite thee to gratytude, neither the passed Storme that inforced thee to creepe vnder Philargus his Lee deborte thee from dysdayne, nor yet the dishonour pursuing the offence deter thee from adulterie, that I maye therefore, amende

by

by iuſtice, what is helpeles by intreaty, this is my Sentence: That Philargus (in lieu of his loſſe) be preſently poſſeſſed of the one halfe of all ẏ is thine, & the reſt to be confiſcate at my pleaſure, vnleſſe within one yeare next thou ſafely bring foorth Alcippe thy wife, his daughter: wherin fayling, to thee I adiudge perpetuall baniſhment.

Whoze Philargus, forthwith enioyed the benefit of this ſentence, & the king finding by further conference & trial, ẏ he neither wanted Gentrie to match with his grauety, nor yet diſcretiõ to deale in matters of eſtate, after a ſhort time, aduanced him to high Offices in publique gouernment. In whome, then profiting with double prayſe, that is, by wiſedome which euermore commendeth it ſelfe, and Authoritie which vnto whom ſoeuer it happeneth, wiſe or witleſſe, neuer wanteth fauorers, or at the leaſtwiſe flatterers, was verified this ſaying, Wiſdome without riches, and authoritie is as a Diamonde, raked vp in a dongehill. It followeth now, that ſomwhat be ſaid what in this meane while became of Alcippe, and alſo what afterwardes befell to hir, Opheltes & Phęmonoe.

Cap. 49.

IMmediatly after that Philargus was (as before) departed from home to ſeeke after Opheltes, Alcippe for the ſame cauſe left alſo her fathers houſe, & came vnto *Sardis*: where vnderſtanding of her huſbandes common haunt to Phæmonoe, ſhe got her ſelfe by meanes into her ſeruice, that ſo at the leaſt, ſhee might beholde him by ſtealth, whome onely ſhe ought to haue held by right: howe often (good ſoule) did ſhe inwardly deuoure her teares with patience (a rare patience, and in her ſex a blacke Swanne) whileſt ſtanding vppon her owne vnworthyneſſe, and to her ſelfe then ſeeming ouer ſimple a wife for ſo ſurlie an huſbande, ſhee neither durſte hazarde to diſcloſe her ſelfe, nor yet was ſo happie to be acknowleged

of

of him, for a Fly was not then an Egles flight, Opheltes not stouped but to Phæmonoe: as for Alcippe, being in his eie but as a Sipher in Augurisme, shee might come to him vnregarded, and passe from him vnremembred: yet wanted she not pacience to suffer his vnkinde prankes, nor diligence to further with her Mistresse his vnwarrãted pastime, yea so farre as &c. extended: so that contenting her selfe with part and not contending for the principall, she sticked not vpon the Substance, but was satisfied with ỳ shadow, Phæmonoe had the game, Alcyppe naught else but the gase: all which (in respect of the necessitie) she did gladly view in silence, as dreading otherwise, to lose the aduauntage of that sorrow.

But when (as before is saide) Philargus had brought Opheltes in displeasure with the king, and discredit with the people, & that his surfited Prodigalitie was throughly purged with a coinlesse Vomit, it came now to passe, that Phæmonoe her loue did suddenly labour of a Consumption, his new want disabled him to pay for his shot, and her old wont disalowed him to runne on the score: yea and that with such contemptious coynesse, and vnkinde disdaine did she handle him, that had not will vtterly ouer-ruled his wit, euen such her entertainemẽt, might easily haue allaied the heat of his inordinate passions, and staied the frenzie of his madding dotage.

The which notwithstanding, the miserable man (and the more miserable in respect of this his disalowable affection, then in that beggery had brought him on his knees, and the king his sentence of banishment, stoode prefently vpon execution) would by no repulse surcease to houer, where by no request (made hee neuer so fayre a pitch) hee coulde seaze.

Now with the increase of his lawlesse desire, ensued the decrease of the lymited peare, wherein he was either to bring forth Alcippe, or fayling thereof to forsake his countrie: what remedy then remaineth but of two euils

to

to make choise of the lesser: but could Opheltes so do? no, his vnruly humour had brought him so far out of square, that he rather doth hazard to be hailed to death (for death was insident to his tariance) out of the slaunderous house of a shameless harlot, then with assurance of life, to vse the benefit of the more fauourable sentence, which was banishment: & yet (inchaunted wiser) what else did he with y price of his deadly aduenture: the buy the emptying of his eyes of restless teares, and the sundering of his hart with continuall sighes, at her handes, & in her presence, whose wilfull coynesse was such, that neither would shee heare him patiently, nor answere him but proudly.

The yeare was now finished, longer the which Opheltes was not to make aboade in *Lydia*, when Phæmonoe, not brooking the cumbersome haunt of so beggerly a Guest, with outragious tearmes flatly forbadde him her house, threatning otherwise, to procure against him the execution of the king his Sentence: wherefore withdrawing him selfe into a solitarie place, with bitter tearmes among, he complaineth in this maner.

The time was, yea (vngratious Cast-away) the time was, that bearing an hart vndismaied of banishment, thou viddest also find hap, vnlooked for, to recouer thy libertie, but I that without crauing in ayde of any, could then recouer my selfe from the treeherie of Fortune, am not now by the assistance of any Fortune, to be rescued from the tyranny of mine owne folly: such a god is loue, or rather such a diuell is lust that onely is strong to my discomfiture, & wanteth not force to drawe me, euen willingly to distruction: but (for of thinges before hande done I am pitifull, & of an action already in framing wel may I prenosticate) as moisture is insident to water, so is mishap an appendant to my destinie: yea it is euident (I say euident, because as heretofore my life, so at this instant my death shall affirme my latter Astrologie infallable) that the fauourable Aspect of no Planet, hath bene qual-

lefying to the luckles Starre of my Nativity, and therefore haue I founde all fortunes, prevailing to the vtter of this Catastrophe: an ende (in deede) base and beastly, when the matter thereof is Lust, the meane a Strumpet, and the manner a violente stopping of myne owne breath. But what shouldest thou longer liue (Opheltes) hauing so good opportunitie, to performe the prodigious execution of thy Destinie, and by one death to ende infinite sorrowes? In saying this, and whilest he resolutely hastned to haue strangled himselfe, by good happe in came Alcippe: who discrying the melancholy pretence of her miserable husbande, and seing the dispayre whereinto hee was then falling, with vapored eyes offereth this kinde duety, to the onely Seedsman of all her sorrowes, saying.

Cap. 50.

IT is (qd. shee) contrarie to man-hood, euen in extremyties of euils not to bee constant, but wilfully peeuish, and peruerse is hee that forgoeth comfort, whilest hee forsaketh counsell: although the man bee tearmed foole-hardie that dareth to followe the aduyse of a woman, yet beleeue mee (Opheltes) as it is not incredyble, but that a Mouse may gnawe a Lion out of a grinne, so is it not impossible, but that I may at the least, giue intermission to thy griefe.

Long did I practise thy cure, but therein performe no other then myne owne care, in preferring thy bootelesse loue to mercylesse Phaedonoe, but I nowe finde, and I woulde thou couldest also feele, that longer to bleede of that vaine, is to leaue thy body bloodlesse, thy heade witlesse, and thy friendes hopelesse of thy recouery: what meanest thou, Opheltes, to straine out a gnat and to swallow vp a Cammell? tearming her vnreasonable in hating thee so deadly that loueth her so dearly, and not espying thy owne greater madnesse, in louing her so dearly that hateth

hateth thee ſo deadly.

Ie might haue ſuffiſed for a rebuke once to haue intermedled with a Curtizan, and for a reproach great enough that ſo badde a woman ſhoulde bluſhe at thy companie, without thus dying a Reprobate, by ſtill rooting in thy paſſed, and purpoſed wickednesſe: leaue of therefore, if not not for ſhame, yet to auoyde ſinne: and knowe that then are the gods ſeuere in correcting when men are ſecure in offending: yea (if for nothing elſe) yet therefore ſhoulde Opheltes bee weaned from lewdneſſe, becauſe Phęmonoe is wedded to lightneſſe: thou wert not her firſt choyce, neyther ſhalt thou bee her laſt change: for the loue of an harlot is not ſo tyed to any one, but that the ſame lyeth open to euerie one (Beggers and Baniſhed-men by proviſo excepted) and thou being in the ſame predicamente, art therefore vnder the ſame Exception concluded: wherfore it is meere follie in thee to looke for other of cuſtome, or to hope for better of curteſie.

But whyleſt our wordes be not plauſible, our counſels ſeeme not profitable: and with ſtrong reaſons to reſiſt loue, were, perhaps, to labour my ſelfe mad with reaſon: For ſuch loue (if I may ſo miſ-tearme luſt) as it is eaſilier receiued, ſo is it hardlier diſgeſted then the Taint Boreſtes, that ſwallowed a Pyte ſwelleth a Monſter: if therefore, Opheltes, thou wilt not be declaimed frō Phęmonoe it reſteth then ỳ Phæmonoe bee reclaimed to thee: which to contriue aſketh coſt, for kindly it is for ſuch Hawkes to ſoare from an empty Fiſt: but Opheltes lacketh, will you ſay, and is therefore helples, but Alcippe lyueth, do I ſay, & therefore not hopeleſſe, ſhe liueth, in deede, to profit thee with a triple benefit, to reſtoore to thee thy liberty & to recouer for thee the moity of thy liuing, to which only Riſe is Phęmonoe in ſequens. Admit therefore Alcippe to ſtand thee in this ſteede, whoſe patience, I know, is ſo liable to thy paſſions, that to worke thee a ſecond delight, ſhe will indure be it a ſeconde deuorſe.

At the naming of Alcippe did Opheltes sigh, and turning his face letteth fall plenty of teares, making at the lēgth vnto her, whom not yet he knew to be Alcippe, such answere.

The tydinges (saith he) are most ioyfull to Opheltes that Alcippe is yet lyuing, but seeing it is currant in eche mans mouth, and also confirmed in mine owne mind, that my falshood towards her doth rather merit a most shamefull death, then the acceptance of such vndeserued assistance, I am much more prone to receiue the first doome by myne owne handes, then apte to receiue the latter grace by her helpe: wherefore I beseech thee to declare to Alcippe, that dying I wish vnto her all good fortune, whō only I haue made altogether infortunat: but know that thy counsell as touching Phæmonoe, is like to an after-showre that falleth when flowres, and rootes are alreadie wytherred: I am determyned to die, and my determynation shall not bee chaunged, for why, to liue vnexiled and wealthely shoulde bee much lesse pleasinge to men, then to die from inwarde veration and outwarde infamie. Onely bee assured (gratious Damsell) that I account this the last, and not the least of my miseries, not to bee able to recompence thee for thy passed and present kindnesse, for the which the heauens graunt thee, what I, besides thankes, haue not to giue thee.

Cap. 42.

ALcippe not a little discouraged at this wilfull answere of his, as her last refuge, made her selfe knowne to her husbande, whom with hartie teares, shee intreateth to vse her if not as a wife (of which name shee sayde her selfe vnworthy) yet at least-wise, as an instrument to discharge him of the kinges Sentence, and as the meane whereby to recouer his extented landes, & suspended libertie.

To

To be ſhort, Opheltes now acknowledging her, ſeemed confounded with ſhame, and in concluſion being wholye conquered with the conſideration of her ſo rare patience, policie, conſtancie, and (which was not inferiour to ỹ reſt) her beauty, confeſſed his falſhood, repented him of his folie, craued pardon for both, and vowed following loyaltie: and hereupon from wondering and weeping, fell they to kiſſing and imbracing.

In which mean while, Phæmonoe (by euill aduenture) entered the place, who perceiuing their mutuall teares, & admiring their vnuſuall familiaritie, whether it were offended therewithall, or fearing leaſt Opheltes, after the time preſcribed for his baniſhment, being taken in her houſe might so turne her to damage, or that iealouſie, frenzie, or malice incenſed her ſo to doe, it ſhall not matter, but howſoeuer it happened, ſhe railed ſo out of ſquare vpon Opheltes with words, and fared ſo roughly against Alcippe with blowes, that (after much ſufferaunce) he not able longer to indure the one, or diſgeſt the other, his Melancholie being nowe conuerted to Choler, whilſte Phæmonoe thus perſiſted to outrage, did in his furie ſtab her to the hart, in ſuch ſorte that of the ſame wound ſhee preſently died.

Immediatelye after the deede done Opheltes was apprehended, who as principall, and Alcippe as Acceſſarie were brought before Philargus, then being in great Honour, and a Juſticer in *Sardis*: who vnderſtanding of the fact, and (with greefe ynough) acknowledging the offendors, becauſe he would not be thought ouer-forward in doing iuſtice againſt Opheltes, neither to ſlacke a Juſticer in reuenging the death of Phemonoe both (as before) his enemies, but chiefly becauſe nature would not ſuffer him to ſit in iudgement againſt Alcippe, his owne, and only child, with a hart therefore melting with ſorrow hee diſmiſſed both Priſoners his preſence, referring their cauſe to be determined by the king in his own perſō: Philargus

(good old man) in the meane while, by so muche suspending his ioy in that he had found his Daughter, by howe much he feared to loose her againe, being now to be arained of murther.

But the matter being thus brought before the king, vpon ỳ ripping vp of al Circumstances, the death of Phęmonoe was though worthie her dishonest life, Opheltes and Alcippe were acquited by the king, and he receiued again into fauour, Philargus is made a ioyfull father of Alcippe, Opheltes is reconciled to him and inriched, and euerye thing amisse was now amended.

BVt that I may now reduse your memories, and retire your eares to the historie whereof I pṛincipallye intreat, that is, of the cause and euent of Atys and Abynados their Quest and trauels, you are to remember that Arbaces the olde *Meade* and his Companion, leauing behind them in their place Sorares and his *Assirians*, are (as before is sayd) escaped out of the barren Iland, frō whence they safely ariued at *Sarmatia*: and from thence againe, as pittying the distresse wherein they had left Sorares and his company, and for their deliuerye they are alreadye resailed to the barren Iland: vnto whom and to Sorares, Atys and Abynados whome we are now to ship from *Lydia*, hapned as immediatelye doth now followe.

(*.*)

Arbaces.

Arbaces.

Pars Calami primi.

Cap. 52.



After that Atys and Abynados had made lōg abode in *Lydia*, hauing receaued great intertainmente and Giftes of the king, they shippe themselues and their companye, cheefelye directing their Course towardes *Sarmatia*: but as they had no absolute knowledge there to finde those persons for whome they sought, so in this their sayling they did not precisely obserue any direct course, but entered now and than into such adiacent Seas, Creekes & Channels, into which likelihoods, profit, pleasure, or necessitie did carrie them. So that in riding vpon the floud *Tanais*, which doth diuide the *Scythians* from the *Sarmatians*, thy coast by a very pleasaunt and dilectable Ilande: here did they lande their men, in purpose to haue taken in fresh water, and other prouigion. But farre had they not forraged frō their ship, disorderly roming (as vnsuspitious of that whiche hapned) when the Ilanders who from the nert mountains had espied their ariuall, lying a great number in ambushment, had sodainly inclosed them in on euery syde, their barbarous darts and weapons for the most part, bearing (to the great terror of the *Assirians*) the bloody tokens of some very late slaughter.

What

What cold the *Assirians* now doe, or rather what did they not that valiant and couragious men shoulde haue done? many they slew, and some of them were slaine: but in the ende, the multitude of the Ilanders preuailed against the manhood of the *Assirians*: who being thus captiuated were anon committed to bands, and than brought before the Gouernesse or rather Goddesse of those Ilanders.

For such was the superstitious errour of the people in those idolatrous dayes, that whosoeuer had extirped Tyraunts, ciuiled Nations, confounded Monsters, or else by prowes, wisedome, Inuention, or by any extraordinarie good, profited any common Wealth and Countrie, the same liuing was magnified for more than a man, and dead canonised a God: so that easier was it thē for men to make Gods, then for such their Gods to make men.

By this meanes therefore it came to passe, that those Ilanders had alreadie in deuotion, deified their Gouernesse Dircilla: for such as was Pallas to the *Grecians*, and Isis to the *Ægyptians*, so and suche was she to this people: and albeit yeres (for now was shy very aged) had wrought a naturall decay in her beautie being yet more then ordinarie, neyther place, time, nor troubles had so empayred the Maiestie of her lookes, or impugned the magnanimity of her hart, but that armed much to the *Amazonian* fashion, she seemed more warlike thē Penthisilea, or rather more terrible then Bellona her selfe.

In such wise issuing out of her portatiue Tent, after she had twise or thrise shaked her prefull Launce, in signe of her vnappeasable furie against the *Assirians*, shee lefte vnto the wretched Captiues the same comfort, as if they had presentlye beheldе the heade of Meduſa: and as the fiercenesse of those her lookes had ynough of feare, so the deliuerie of these her wordes had nothing of hope.

Are (qd. she, to the Ilanders) the bands, and captiuitie

of

of theſe vngratious people ſufficient (thinke you) to warrant your ſafetie? or haue I pleaſure (ſuppoſe you) to ſee their bodies yet breathing, vpon whoſe Ghoſts alſo, were it poſſible, we ſhould doe execution? was I yeſterday deceaued in thoſe *Aſſirians* whom I commaunded you to execute, as the Eſpials and Agents of ſome other their Accomplicers? or thinke you by intercepting of them, and theſe you haue diſappointed their Confederacie? no, no, be ye aſſured that the expedition of their Treaſons, doth not only conſiſt vpon theſe two Companies: eſteeme therefore all haſte ouer little, vntill you haue mingled their blood with the bowels of the others, their Explorers: otherwiſe it will come to paſſe, and that before you looke for it, but not ſooner than I (experienced of their treacheries) feare it, that theſe Rouers and Robbers of ẏ whole world, being by their tyrannous countrimen (alreadie perchaunce at point of their arriuall) reſcued out of our hands, ſhal ſtand them in no ſmall ſteed to the cutting of your throates, and the conqueſt of this our Iland.

Haue you forgot how yeſter-day, euen the ſentence of death could not pluck down the courage of their Companions? and why? forſooth reaſon had they to hope, that expected this helpe: and marke you not alſo howe the careleſſe countinaunces of theſe our Thrals, doe not ſo muche argue a contempt of death, as the like hope that their armed Confederates are already marching to their reſcue? once againe therefore I ſay, let your haſt in putting them to death, cut off their hope in purpoſing vpon life: of lyſe ſayd I? yea and hauing made a maſſacre of your liues, and pray of your Countrie, to ſuruiue you in the one, and ſucceede you in the other.

To Atys Abynados, and to the reſt this her Sentence ſeemed no more ſeuere, then to be charged of Confederacie with before executed *Aſſirians* ſtrange: but therin to haue bene guiltie or not guiltie was all one, it ſuffiſing to Dircilla her wrath, and their deaths onely that they were

Assirians: vnto whiche people (the occasion why hereafter following) she had vowed her selfe a deadly enemie.

Cap. 53.

WHilst she was yet speaking, diuers of the Ilanders (as purposing a generall slaughter) in great fury ran to a Caue not far of, and anon return, rigorously driuing before thē certain *Assirians*, whom the day before they had taken forraging in the Iland, and of whose deaths Dircilla their Gouernesse, had before giuen them in commaundement.

But the Ilanders, being naturally pittiful, altogeather vnacquainted with sheading of blood, and dwelling as it were in a world by themselues, had neuer till then seene Shippe or Straunger: and therefore, had not the fierce words and wrath of Dircilla more preuailed, then the inhumanitie, or malice of those harmelesse people, the *Assirians* had not only not bene assailed and captiuated, but also, such admiration did their beauty and brauery strike in to the harts of the idolatrous Ilanders, that eyther they had easily beleeued them to be Gods, or at the least-wise durst not haue made proofe of their manhoods. But Dircilla commaunding, whose wordes to them were as Oracles, they feared not to enterprise, were it neuer so rare, or great an Aduenture: only herein (as moued with compassion) they had borrowed of their vsuall obedience, in that they had not, according to her commaundement the day before, done execution vpon those first-arriued *Assirians*.

Wherfore Dircilla, contrary to her thought, seeing them yet liuing whose death she had commaunded, one while firing her froward eies vpon the miserable Captiues, and anone casting her frouning lookes vppon the Ilanders, after she had, with sharp reprehentions, reproued them of disobedience, and reproued them of foolish pitie, that her

words

woꝛdes had now made them altogether as pittileſſe, as her owne purpoſe was cruel, ſhe cauſed both the firſt, and laſt company of the *Aſſirians* to aſſend the toppe of a ſteepe Rocke, from whence to be ſtoung downe headlong, was the death whereunto they were all adiudged, by this angrie Virago.

Great was the generall lamentation that the Aſſirians then made, and no leſſe the admiration that either companie had of this their heauie, and vnexpected meeting, and that amongſt ſo barbarous a people: howbeit of all this time, on neither part was any acquaintance take, for they all ſeemed ſtraungers one to another. But anon, as the friend imbraceth his friend, and ech man encouрageth his fellow, with patience and conſtancie to leaue this life, and as Atys and Abynados plie them, now to one place, & then to an other, ſtill with godly exhoꝛtations, ſtrengthening the l...ting courages of ſome their fearefull Countriemen, amõgſt the firſt-ariued Aſſirians, they eſpied Sorares their father. But, alas, the maner of this their diſmal meting was ſo much the moꝛe lamentable, by howe much moꝛe the ſame might haue bene ioyfull, had they not bene croſſed by this miſſoꝛtune: there might one ſee ỹ Sonnes to want all tokens of gladneſſe in ſaluting their Father, and the Father furniſhed with all ſignes of heauineſſe in intertaining his Sonnes: and the ſkilfulleſt Painter in making a ſeuerall Counterfeit to euery ſoꝛowfull countinaunce, either ſhould haue ben grounded in varietie, oꝛ elſe haue painted moꝛe then one Agamẽnon, vnder a vale, bemoni... the death of Iphigenia. Yea ſo pitifull were the confuſed Cries, & this doleful Spectacle, euen to the Mãders themſelues, that moued with compaſſion, they made no haſt at all to do execution, as was the ſeuere commaundement of their Gouerneſſe.

But Dircilla only conſtant in her crueltie, & the rather, when ſhe perceaued the miniſters of her wrath thus ſuddenlye enclined to mercy, being ſet in a double chaufe,

did ſingle out from either company of the *Aſſirians* two of the moſt aged perſons: and then hardly with-holding her Fiſt from their faces, and her Lawnce frō the boſoms of her own people, vſed theſe following ſpeeches.

Cap. 54.

HOw farre off (fooliſh and vngrateſull people) I am euen from any tirannous thoughte whereof it ſeemeth you haue me in ielouſie, the ſelf-witneſſe of theſe two auncient murderers, may happily fit me with a ſufficient purgation: for as I perſwade my ſelfe that al *Aſſirians* generally are fleſhed with blood, ſo I eaſily coniecture that theſe two, in reſpect of their yeres, ſhould be parties, or at the leaſt wiſe priuie to thoſe murthers whereof I ſhall now ſpeake: yea, although a godleſſe life hath commonly a graceleſſe ende, yet it may be that theſe olde Hou[illegible]des (whom if you ſhall ſpare, a natural death will ſhortly diſpatche) will at the laſt penitentlye confeſſe, what at the leaſt I perticularly expreſſe. But if it fall out againſt me gueſſe, yet either ſhal I make the very name of an *Aſſirian* odious in your eares, or by reporting my iuſt quarrell, proue my ſelf guiltleſſe of tiranny. Omitting therefore to be curious, as touching the trecherous arriual of ỹ *Aſſirian* Armies into *Media* my natiue countrie, vnder conduct of their butcherous Emperor Ninus, it ſhall ſuffiſe that my weeping eyes ſomwhat ealing my hart, ſhal anon licence my toung, in few, to touch with what beſtial cruelty they ordered their bloody Conqueſt. Theſe mine [illegible]chelde the roiall Pauilion of king Farnus my Fathe[illegible] conſumed with fire, which way ſoeuer I looked the countrey abrode was al a flame: here mighte I ſee an heape of *Meades* newly ſlaughtered, there the *Aſſirians* to perſeuer in ſleying: this Villain murthereth a Matron ouer the dead body of her ſonne or huſband, ỹ Ruffen haileth, by her faire heare, ſome noble Virgin to rauiſhmēt, death or captiuity:

one

one ſundereth the impotent olde-man in ſporte, an other ſleaeth the ſtrong-membred yong-mã in diſpight: yea in euerie corner was ſuch murdering, ſacking, captiuating, racking, rifling, and horror what not: that death ſeemed leaſt damage that the poore *Medes* then ſuſtained. If the rehearſal of this common Calamitie will not ſuffice, I haue alſo a particuler complaint againſt the *Aſſirians*: who (then in which they might not haue perpetrated greater crueltie) hauing pupoſely made the Kinge and Queene my parentes eye-witneſſes, of the moſt miſerable condicion of their Subiectes and Signorie, did alſo, euen in their ſight, murder ſeuen yonge Princes their children: and (leaſt in any one thing, they might ſeeme not to haue outraged in tyrannie) with the luke-warme blood of the children they mingled alſo the bloode of the parentes: leauing me of their frutefull iſſue the onelye Remaine. But more then this, and (who was fully as deare, or dearer to me then parentes, brethren or country) in this bloody buſineſſe I loſt by death or captiuitie, I wot not which, Duke Arbaces, ah Arbaces my huſband, who not long before had made me a mother of an vnfortunate Sonne, was then bereft me. Alſo when the *Aſſirians* ſhould depart, mine harmefull beautie procured my ſhipping towardes *Aſſiria*, for why, the Emperour had in his purpoſe appointed me one of his Concubynes: with which purpoſe of his I, deſolate I, became ſo perplexed, that from thencefoorth breaking truce with my pacience, I was rather to ſeeke of a deſperate practiſe then a conſenting vnto haue periſhed, in ſomuch, that the motherly care of my Babe then hanging on my breaſt, had not bayled me from death, if a worſer occurrant had not withſtood ſo an good occaſion: for by the commandement of Aſcolanta the Emperiſſe (being now enuious of my beautie, and waxing iealous of her huſbandes liking) I was all alone ſet a ſhoare in this Iſlande, by which meanes I alſo forwent my ſweete Infant: and vntill now, my deſartes

more(as appeareth)then your deuotions, haue giuen me here intertainment. It is not vaine-glory (I speake not now to these *Assirians*, whom I worthely maligne, but to you the Inhabitants of this Iland, whom vnworthely I haue profited) ỹ moueth me thus to vaſt deſerts, but your owne vnthankfulneſſe that will not value my merits: for meete though it be, that you vouche the heauens for the matter of your wealth, whereof you long were ignorant, yet amiſſe were it not, to vouchſafe me a prerogatiue in ỹ manner and vſe, as firſt deliuered vnto you by mine inuention. I founde you without Gods, without Religion, without Lawes, or Gouernment, naked, wild, brutiſh, & beaſt-like, feeding on Roots, harbouring in Buſhes, feare full of your own ſhadowes, and to diſcribe you in a word, Monſters wrapped in man-like habbites: but in theſe through mine induſtry you haue now Reformatiõ, & were it not that prouender doth pricke you, and fulneſſe make you fooliſh, only you, might be ſaid an happie people: and that, ywis, not ſomuch in reſpect the naturall pleaſure, and plentie of this your popilous Iland (through aterreſtriall Parradiſe) as in that mine experience and plat-forme hath warned you, and might haue armed you frõ the Incurſions of theſe Tyrants, the cõmon Skourge to all people: againſt whom, not without cauſe as you haue heard, my tongue long ſince hath proclaimed deadly Foade, neither, in ſeeking reueng, ſhal mine hart breake Couenante, with the diſeaſed ghoſtes of my murdered friendes. But (on Gods name) be it ſo, that neither *Media* for example, my ſelfe for merittes, the *Aſſ*[illegible] their miſchieues, our law for iuſtice, you for duety, nor I for authoritie, be it ſo, I ſay, that none of theſe haue that waight of argument, to winne you reuenging Inſtruments, to wreake my teene vpon theſe Tyrantes: yet at the leaſt-wiſe, be prouident for your owne ſafety, and preuent your owne euilles, by puniſhing theſe your apparant enemies: of whom the queſtion is not, whether they all haue iumped

ped vppon one diuelish Actempt, that is, the conquest of you and your Countrie (all circumstances directly approuing such consequent) but, because according to the mind of the offendor we are to measure offences, & for that there may be mercy in punishing, and crueltie in sparing, let vs see whether of the, two, pittie or punishment is in this case more requisite. If this offence of the *Assirians* had bene committed through ignorance, infirmitie, prouocation on our parte, through rashnes (for sometimes rashnesse, and such like infirmities are in some men as sicknesses) if priuatly against one, or a few, or by your known foes, then I deny not, but that mercie might haue borrowed of Justice: but I wil cleare them (as men that wil not offend but in the highest degree) of these petite faults, and charge them with capitall crymes. They (least herein they should degenerate from *Assirians*) of pretended mallice without matter, haue hoysted their sayles to forren windes, and vsed their vnpeaceable weapons against vnknowen people: not for Enmitie, but for Ambition, not ignorantly by chance, but aduisedly by counsel, not rashly, but resolutely, not against some, but against all, not because you deserue warre, but because they dispise peace: yea, had not I fore-warned you, as hauing had tryall of their treacheries, you should haue sealt their woundes before you coulde haue feared their words: and after they had glutted them selues with Slaughters, Rauishments, Sacrileges, Burninges, Spoylinges, and all kinde of Mischieues, the Ruines of your Ilande shoulde not haue priuileged the Suruiuours of you, frō their intollerable Slauery. If this much, which might suffise for me to charge them, & for you to correct them be yet insufficient, then haue I also Reason, & Honestie Coparswadors herof. Reason I say, because better afew be punished then ỳ a multitude should perish, & Honestie, because in ỳ you may, and will not, you take vpon your selues the Offence of the Offendoures, and betray the good whilest you

you boulster the badde: for Impunitie is the Syringe of Carelelneſſe, the Mother of Inſolencie, the roote of impudencie and the Nurſe of al Tranſgreſſions. For ſhame therefore, Sirs, inchaunt your harmefull pittie, and remember that not to correct is to conſent to the Crime. Better it is that I remember you of the perill, then you repent you of your pitty, for if you ſtaie vntil Experience, the Philoſophie of Fooles, hath taught you what I haue toulde you, then, to your coſtes, you ſhall finde that the *Aſſirians* be men enemies to mankinde, not to bee made your friendes by Compulſion or Compoſition, whoſe enmitie commeth of Cuſtome, and not by occaſion: euen this diſgrace, if they eſcape, that their liues & liberties were in your power to giue, or take is vnnaturall for their natures to digeſt, for which (were there no other cauſe) their cankared Stomackes ſhal requite your ſufferance with the abuſe of you patience: it is a thing impoſſible, to reconcile an hart hardned with pride and mallice to honeſtie. But what? is it decēt that I pleade before mine own Vaſſails? that I intreate as a Subiect whome I ſhould commaunde as a Soueraine? my ſufferance, I ſee, is cauſe of your ſtubbornelle, & my curteſie of your cōtempt: At my firſt comming when I might haue had adoration as a Goddeſſe, I was not then ſo hautie as to take it, and now that I ſhould haue obedience as you Gouerneſſe, you are not ſo humble as to giue it: thus deale you with mee as did the Frogges with Iupiters Rafter, you make me a Stock, but beware theſe Stoiks. And truely, ſeeing you haue not deſerued why I ſhould be longer carefull of you and your welfare, and for, that by diſobedience, you will needes inflict vpon your ſelues ſo grieuous a puniſhmēt, I alſo giue my conſent (a reuenge too great I confeſſe) that theſe our Captiues be anon deliuered to their ſhips: that, being inſufficient of them ſelues, they may inuite frō *Aſſiria* the diſtruction, and ruine of you, your wiues, your children, your goodes, and your whole countrie: for enough

nough haue the *Aſſirians* ſeene in this our Ilande, to allure hether multitudes of Inuadours.

Cap. 55.

THeſe her wordes, had now ſo incenſed the mindes of the Ilanders againſt the *Aſſirians*, that eurie of them was clearely reſolute in the death of his Priſoner: but for that one of the two olde Captiues, whom Dircilla had (as before) ſingled out, and whom her wordes had now eſpecially touched to the quicke, was ſuddenly bereft his ſences, and ſaine in a ſowne: And for that the Ilanders ſtoode vppon expectation of ſome further confeſſion, to be deliuered by the ſeconde olde-man, who was alredy, in way of aunſwere to Dircilla, entred into ſome and theſe following ſpeaches, therefore vntill he ſhoulde ende, the determined ſlaughter receiued a ſeconde adiornement.

I proteſt (qd. this aged man) by whatſoeuer God hath care of vs and this Countrie, by the Sunne, and the holy Fire of *Caldia*, and as eurie of theſe ſhall, in this life, cõfort my withered Carcaſe, more fit for the wormes thẽ the worlde, and doe good to my Soule, when it ſhall leaue the wearieſome priſon of this my body, I ſhall, Lady, neither diſſemble for feare, accuſe for enuie, or excuſe for affection, but as touching that wherewithall we are nowe charged, vtter all that I know, and know all to be troth I ſhall vtter.

For my ſelfe therefore I ſay, that moſt trewe and too trewe it is, that the *Aſſirians*, then conducted by Ninus, committed ſuch and the ſame before remembred outrages, ſlaughters, and ſpoyles in *Media*, neither were you deceiued in gueſſing ſome of vs to bee priuie, or parties to that buſines, wherein (to ſaye troth) my ſelfe was no ſmall parte: but howe? not (alas) as a Spoyler with the *Aſſirians*, but as a Sufferer with the *Meades*, for *Media* is the place of my bearth, *Aſſiria* only of mine

aboade. And for these *Assirians*, mine owne companie I meane, I say, Ladie, that not charging them with the faultes of their Auncestours, or any further then wherein them selues be guiltie, you, but especially yours haue greter cause of kindnesse, then of any crueltie: for proofe and better credit wherof, besides my former protestation, somewhat it is (whom since my hither-comming I haue not heard named) that I know you to be Dircilla, wife & Ladie to the Duke Arbaces: but more, that I the speaker of these wordes am Orchamus brother vnto the same your husbande: and more then so, the man vnto whose care, when suddenly, at the commaundement of the Emperise, you were snatched from out your Cabben, you commended your yong Sonne, saying: Ah good Orchamus, if thy fortune proue better then ỹ destinies of al thy friends, be a Parent to thy poore Nephewe, whome with more griefe I leaue an Orphant, thē to haue seene him buried: I well remember the wordes, and, me-thinkes, I yet see these very weepinges which pearced mine heart, at this our lamentable separation. Since which time (Dircilla) I haue not onely bene carefull to answere the same your trust, but also, beyonde expectation, I found Fortune and opportunitie therein afflicting. For no sooner was the *Assirian* Fleete arryued at home, but that Ninus (not a little displeased at your losse, the which by the Emperise, & her ministers was smoothly cloaked with a colourable excuse) but that Ninus, I say, caused your Sonne to bee nursed and nurtured with prince-like attendance: and when his age serued, who then of greater credit and courage, or a more notable Captaine then was Sorares, among ſt the *Assirians*? But in the returne of the imperiall Nauie from the *Bactrian* warres, by occasion of a sudden tempest then happening, Sorares your Sonne, my nephew and all the companie aboorde his ship, were lost from the rest, in the Sea *Caspium*. Now when this heauie newes was bruted at *Niniue*, I, Atys, and Abynados, his two

Sonnes

Sonnes (for he hath made you a grãdmother of these two Gentlemen) and these other, his, and our friends, vowing our selues in his continual Quest, haue three yeares alredy, trauailed many Countries and Seas, to find out Sorares: through occasion whereof, as also to take in fresh water and other necessaries, and not vpon any such purpose as you pretende, we are aryued in this Iland, and lo, yonder-same (he pointed to Sorares) is the man farre sought, but vnluckely here founde, if finding him wee loose our selues, and with the ende of our labours, make also an ende of our liues.

Cap. 56.

IN few, what with this talke, and other more effectuall tokens, Dircilla being brought to her Creede, and left in *de profundis*, rather musing at their meeting being so straunge, then mistrusting the matter being credited, or euer she might imbrace Sorares, or reply to Orchamus, was interrupted by the seconde Olde-man, the other of the two singled-out Captiues: who in a ioyfull extasie, suddenly clapped her (frowardly disdayning his imbracinges, as not yet cooled of her former chaufe) betwixte his braune-fallen armes. But when he saw her lookes, not vnlike to those in the picture of Proserpina, newly rapted by Pluto, it entered then his thought, that rashly to iest with Sainctes or eug-tooles, might proue daungerous: wherefore as doubting the like reward, that had Aesops kind Asse, vnkinde-like imitating the wanton Spanniel, for the time therefore charming such his kindnesse, anon he founde opportunitie, thus to chaunge her copnesse.

I giue place, sayde he, to the time, but not to Dircilla, whome these armes (pythlesse though they nowe bee) once coulde, nay often did, not violently but willingly imbrace (may I so blabbe) euen in the bedde of Arbaces: blushe not, Dircilla, blushe not, the spoyte was lawfull, howsoeuer the repoyte may seeme ouer liberall:

and if (for pouertie parteth friendes) you disdaine to acknowledge such acquaintance, yet at the least for Arbaces his sake, deale mercifully with these your Prisoners. As for my selfe, could I pleade no other protection then that I am olde enough not to feare death, it might suffise: but nether did I hope so well as I haue here founde, neyther doe I feare so ill as I am here threatned: Orchamus (for so your countenance promiseth a consent) hath alredy founde grace, because he is brother to your husbande Arbaces, and therefore not likely is it, that Arbaces him selfe speaking for him selfe, or rather for me, shall speede worser then both Orchamus: neither do I make it a doubt, but that Sorares sonne to Arbaces and you, is alike deare to either parent: and of the saffetie of Atys and Abynados his sonnes, naturall loue I presume tendereth a warrantize: but now generally, and briefly as touching all these *Assirians*, my selfe, Dircilla, will be their Borrowe, if Arbaces his Baile may deliuer them of their Bandes.

To make short tale, Dircilla now hearing, and seeing sufficient to the acknowledging of her husbande, vnable then to moderate her sudden ioy, & in respect of her yeares and whom euen now shee seemed, vnlike to her selfe, shee lightly claspeth Arbaces as redy to imbrace, as to be imbraced betwixt her armes: who mutually mixing their ioyfull teares, with louing kysses, were either of them long time bereft the vse of their tōgues: of which pleasant passions Orchamus, Sorares, Atys, and Abynodos were also glad Copartners: neither were the by-standers, aswell *Assirians*, as Ilanders exempted for idle inspectoures of so euill appayed Actours in this ioyfull Accident.

After therefore more then a little ioy on all sides ouerpassed, by reason of this happie meeting thus disclosed, wherein (after many yeares, and euerie person seuerally scattered in a sundrie Countrie) the husbande had recouered his Wife, shee her husbande, both

both their Sonne, he his Parents, him his ſonnes, hee them, the brother his brother, the kinſman his kindred, and the friend his friend, and (whiche more is) after extreme miſeries attaining to ſuch inſpeakeable ioyes, yea and at that inſtant, when nothing was leſſe hoped for then life, after (I ſay) this ioyful meeting, the Priſoners were all ſet at libertie, and bountifully feaſted by Dircilla, and her Ilanders. And then euery of the *Méades* ſeuerally reported what had befalne them, ſince their chaſing out of their countrie (as before) by Nipus.

First Arbaces tolde of their tragicall ariuall into the barren Iland, and how he and his fellow, ſuruiuing the reſt, after they had bene long ſhut vp there in great miſerie, did deliuer themſelues from thence (as in the beginning of this Booke is remembered) in the ſhip of Sorares, whome then, or before this very time he knew not for his Sonne: then ſheweth he of their ſafe ariuall, and good intertainment in *Sarmatia* from whence, hauing obtained a ſhippe and men, as pittying the diſtreſſe wherein they had left Sorares and his *Aſsirians*, and for their deliuery, they againe reſailed to the barren Iland: then laſtly how they had no ſooner taken Sorares, and his miſerable ſouldiours aboord, and put their ſhip againe to the Seas, but that a ſudden ſtorme, droue them perforce vpon that ſame pleaſaunt Iland, wherin this their ieoberdious ioy thus hapned.

Sorares, Atys, and Abynados did (in effect) no other then itterate the former report of Orchamus: and nowe was it come to Dircilla her turne to ſpeake, whoſe wordes, containing a more pittiful, profitable, and pleaſant diſcourſe, then a curious deliuerie, thus follow.

Cap. 57.

WHen, Arbaces, the Mariners had landed and left me poſt alone in this Iland, the day was farre ſpent, and my wits almoſt at an ebbe: then was thy name riſe in my mouth, & (though alſo in vaine) the extincte names of my dead parents, and bzetheren: yea mine eyes with feare, & my hart with loue, did both twain follow thoſe enuious Sayles, whereby Sorares my ſonne, then an Infant, was carried Captiue into a ſtraunge Countrey, from mee his helpeleſſe mother: and when mine eyes might no longer accompanie him through diſtaunce of Seas, yet did my hart ariue with him euen in *Aſiria*. Anon with freſhe ſupplies did ſozrowes confuſedly ſucceede ſozrowes, being in number ſo great, and in nature ſo greeuous, that one of my then paſſions might haue ſet twentie toungs a worke, one of thoſe toungs haue cõſtrained a milliõ eies to teares, & the leaſt cauſe of thoſe teares haue killed ỳ wepers hart: neither did it alone ſuffiſe, ỳ I thus ſozrowed foz thinges paſt, but I alſo feared a wozld of woes not vnlikly to haue followed. Here perceaued I a pleaſaunt Iland, but vnmanured (as might ſeeme) of people: retire back I could not, go forwards I durſt not, behind me raged the wide ſeas, beſoze me muſtered the wild Deſerts, and on either ſide, heard I the vnacquainted noyſe of dzeadful Monſters: and yet (troth to ſaye) I leſſe doubted the fierceneſſe of anye Monſter, that could but deuoure my body, then the falſhood of men (if any were) that mighte haue abuſed my beautie: foz, beſides that mine Attire, not vnbeſeeming the daughter of Farnus, was then very gozgious, and myne age (I being then in the flower of my youth) anſwerable to mine Attire, my beautie alſo (though I ſay it) was then ſutable to both, in commendation wherof, thy ſelf (my Arbaces) didſt, in thoſe our altian dayes, affect ouer-much the figure *Hyperbole*, & with the Ilanders here, was ỳ ſame

not

not a little effectuall to winne me fauour: but this braue bragge to such as now heare me, and did not then see me, will, no doubt, seeme more audatious in report, then autenticall for credit, yet do I speake it in this place, where erre I cannot without controulment.

These feares, I say, and a thousande like fantasies thus occupying my thoughts, suddenly I hearde a boysterous rushing amongst the next boughes, foure of these Iläders anon disclosing themselues vnto my vew: euerye of them held in his right hand a cragged Dart, and in the lefte a great quantitie of raw flesh: at sight wherof (and a greater horror then so) when, not meanly affrighted, I beheld how gluttonously they crammed down their Mawes, the same flesh yet reaking in their teeth, & how their Chaps, beardes, breastes, armes, handes, and whatsoeuer grisly part of them leaues had left bare, were al besmeared with blood, though death was then the least of all my feares, yet (beleeue mee) the crueltie prefigurated by this sauadge Spectacle, did strike to my hart such incomprehensible terrour, that if, at the least, sorrowes had not bereft me of sence, in comparison hereof, the sufferaunce of a simple death had bene no death, or in no part so dreadfull.

Now, whilst I applie this horrible presidente to feede my new feare, and rather dreaded, then doubted, that anon their imbrewed hands should seaze, & their rauinous teeth tire vpon me and my flesh, and I so receiue an vnnaturall burial within their bowels, the barbarous people had espied out me: who then, as Deare newly brought to the stande, with Countinances indifferently inclining to admiration and feare, stood a great while aloofe off at gaze. Anon seeing me to approch them nearer and nearer, after many Satirlike freakes, with nimble feet & swift flight, they skud awaye into the neareſt woods, wildly boulting through the Thickets, and with incredible facilitie, mounting and dismounting the sharp and steepe Roches.

Them

then(a ſtrange and prepoſterous courſe mighte it ſeeme, if not in ſo deſparate a caſe, that the Hare ſhould followe the Hound)as I fearing purſued them flying, with purpoſe, at leſt by falling into their hands, to haue died from ſuch miſeries, in caſting my eye aſide, I perceiued ỳ Cacr and carcaſe of a Beare, the whiche theſe men had newly ſlaughtered, and vpon whoſe diſmẽbred limbes (as might ſeeme) I had euen now ſeene them feeding. This facte of theirs as it ſeemed to participate a fearce and beſtiall courage, ſo ſuch their food did argue in them a defect of humane conditiõs, and both it, and whatſoeuer elſe I here beheld, preſented ouer ſkatheful ſights to mee, euen nowe ſo wealthie, and wanton a Lady. Thus hitherto did I ſalute penury at the Threſhold, ſeeming to me an intollerable hanſell.

But whilſte I thus lingered a dying life, Night, the diſcomfortable Regiſter and Remembrancer of all miſeries, had taken place of the oppoſite, and ouerſhadowed all this Countrie: then fleeted many thoughts in my minde, not only of preſent ieoberdies, but alſo of paſſed ioyes: and by how much more nice and delicate education, or to bee exact from ſo royall parentage made once to happineſſe, by ſo much more penurie, and diſtreſſe added nowe to perpleritie and impatience: for what thing can happen more vnkindly, then that pleaſaunt and good cauſes ſhould varie in peruerſe and bad effects: or what leaue wee with more greefe, then what we poſſeſſed with moſt ioy: I that lately had all, or more than I could readily aſke, could not aſke now any one needefull thing I might poſſibly haue, but as in better times I had ſuperfluitie with ſupplies, ſo in this change of fortune I ſuffered neceſſitie with decreaſe: Beggers know in what, and by whome to bee relieued, but (alas) euen beggerie did by ſo muche better mine infortune, by howe much I neither knew to begge, nor found of whome to receiue, and whereof Beggers are not reſtrained) it lay not in my choiſe to make chaunge of

the

the place, whatsoeuer in charitie I founde in the people.

But by that time, the torture of two or three of these daily terrors, and nightly torments had racked Vertue from Necessitie, I tried this Crosse both possible to happen, and founde the same in euent profitable: for as the Horse late pampered vp at the full manger, and anon turned out to grasing, doth not willinglye forsake his bare pasture, againe to returne to his sweete Prouendor, so I, (although my sufferaunce came at first by constraint, yet constraint growing to a custome, and custome to a confirmation of patience) vsed the Libertie of these Woods, as a Supersedias against the World: yea when my Flesh was mortified, and my Spirits quickned, I coulde then consider, that Vertue and Riches sieldome couple in one body: and when I was so farre secluded from the vaine delights of the world, that neither mine eyes might see the, mine eares heare them, nor my hart hope for them, I then easily deuerted from the Compounds of Education, and reuerted to the Simples of Nature: and in so needye a life, I remembred my naked byrth, and conceiued the like of my graue. Thus profite we in diuine Uirtue, when we decay in humaine presumption: and herein onely differ we from brute beasts, that they naturallye knowe not themselues, but such ignorance in vs worketh vnkindly to brutishnesse.

Now, credit me, Arbaces, all seemed thee vaine whiche before time I had in most value: for I remember (and I thinke the world is as it was) that in our Heads, Heares, Habbits, and behauiours, Varietie so squared out Fashions according to our own Fantasies, that whilst Nature seemed a Dotarde, and Arte an Infant too-bad became a Brauerie: that our faces so borrowed of Phao his Box, that the interest exceeding the loan, Beautie with some became a Banquerupt: that our Feete (proud Fooles) so troad vpon the earth as if earth, disdained to touch earth.

But ſmile I muſt to remember, how ſome with a Maſke, a Scarfe, or a Plume, could as formally keepe their olde or black and bad faces from ſight, as didde others their beautie from Sunne-burne: neyther couldè ought bee tollerated in yong, fayre, and noble Dames for their prerogatiue, that was not anon taken vp by olde, foule, and meane Drofels for pride, ſo that we becomming May-ladies, they would anon counterfeit Maid-marians: and yet theſe Apes in purple, in our fashions, gate, and niceneſſe, followed vs in nothing ſo effectuallye, as did ſome men effeminatelye, whoſe lockes were ſo like trimmed, beautie ſo tended, and all their ornaments ſo woman-like tempered, that onely to haue taken their Swordes from their ſides, and then to haue giuen them Fannes in their hands, had bene altogether to reſemble, with whom they did altogether deſemble, women.

This did I then remember, and the vanities herof ſeemed moſt ridiculous: alas, would I thinke to my ſelfe, that ſometimes was as nice as the niceſt, with what fooliſhneſſe frequent we our bodies to coſtly balmes and curious ornaments, which after a few dayes Death preſenteth to the Graue, and the Graue to the Wormes: and why are we remiſſe & careleſſe in beautifying our ſoules, fit preſents for the Gods themſelues, with incorruptable vertues.

If (more thankefully be it now ſpoken, than the ſame was then accepted) aduerſity would offer vnto other Ladies, or to whomſoeuer, the ſame opportunitie to contemplate and conſider of the World, as was, and is alotted to me, Beautie would ſeeme Vanitie, the loſſe of Riches, the recouery of quietneſſe, a Ranſome from Fortune, and a diſcouerie of our ſelues: and wee our ſelues ſhoulde appeare to our ſelues, no other then Examples of weaknes, Spoiles of Time, the Game of Fortune, Patternes of inconſtancie, Receptacles of miſerie, Markes for Enuie, in conception loathſome, in birth helpeleſſe, in youth witleſſe,

leſſe, in age wretched, of life vncertaine, of death ſure, and conſequently, wel ſhall they that thus ſay:

Poſt hominem vermis, poſt vermem fœtor & horror
Sic in non hominem vertitur omnis homo.

Cum fax, cum limus, cum res viliſſima ſimus,
Vnde ſuperbimus? ad terram terræ redimus.

Therfore ſhould we behaue our ſelues here, not as though we liue only for our bodies, but as though we coulde not liue without bodies: neither ſo to follow the worlde, that we alſo fall with the world, which being ours, we are not our own. But hitherto haue you not heard, how I fell in with theſe Ilanders: the order whereof I ſhall now tell you.

Cap. 58.

THeſe conſiderations (my deare Arbaces) at the fyrſte vrged of neceſſitie, and then vſed as neceſſarie, beſides the place it ſelfe, whiche ſeemed a ſeconde *Elyſium*, or of pleaſure, and plentie Nature her Store-houſe: wherein eche Hill might ſeeme a *Parnaſſus*, eche Valley an *Eden*, eche Groue a *Tempe*, and eche Water a *Tagus*: and more-ouer (which did not a little delight) with theſe the people alſo, the men and nimble Lads of this Ilande, vnto whom, if wee graunte their then Attire and wildneſſe, and from theſe other except their Satyre-like Members and Manners, they ſhoulde ſeeme righte Fani, or Satirs: or rather, in reſpecte of their perſonages (mighte not the Compariſon ſeeme Sacralegious to his Deitie) in ſteede of Dartes, arming them with bow and quiuer, ſuch as was ſayde luſtie Nomius in the fieldes of *Theſſalie*.

And what ſhal I ſpeake of mine own Sex: whoſe louelye faces were ſuche as you nowe ſee, and whoſe beautifull bodies, becauſe I deſcried them little better

then bare, had the diſcouerie bene yours, might, perhaps, otherwiſe haue delighted your wanton eyes: beleeue me, ſo Nymph-like were their faces and faſhions, that whether it were, in beholding the calme ſeas, that they trippeD on the Shoare, they ſeemed ſuch as are reported the Nereides: or that they ſloung themſelues into ſome pleaſaunt Fountain, they reſembled the Naiades: or that they kept the ayrſome Mountaines, they repreſented the Oreades: or that amongſt the Woods calling themſelues into a ring, they daunced their Roundiloes, or gathering ſweete Gayes, they decked themſelues with Flowers, or that they couched their white ſides on the ſofte Hearbes, in theſe alſo they mighte haue bene taken for the Dryades.

By aſſiſtaunce, I ſay, of theſe, that is, Patience, Time, Place, People, and this ſweete and vnthreatned Libertie (the only remembraunce of thee Arbaces, and of Sorares my ſonne excepted) I made not only a reſiſtaunce for the time, but at length a finall conqueſt of Fortune. And hauing ſecretlye, and ſufficiently obſerued the harmleſſe maners and diſpoſitions of theſe people, and in all things reformed my ſelfe to their faſhions, when opportunitie ſerued, I fell in with the reſt, & behaued my ſelfe ſo formally that (no one ſuſpecting to the contrarie) I was taken for an here-breede Flandreſſe: but by this meanes chanced my Credit, and Authority.

Hauing thus by little and little crept in acquaintance, after a while (as moued ſo to doe, by reaſon of my colde attier and coulder lodging, more naturall to them then vſuall to me, albeit both to thē and me tollerable ynough, becauſe then this, no Climate may be more temperate) I hapned one Euening, a great number of the Flanders being then preſent, with a Flint-ſtone to ſtrike fyre, and therewithall to kindle an heape of ſtickes and other drie matter: but lo (a thing vnthoughte of) they who neuer before had ſeene Fire, but ſuppoſed the ſame to be ſome miracu-

miraculous Accident presently derived from the Sonne, which they worshipped for their God, as people therefore rauished of their sences, and holding both it and me in reuerent admiration, they offer diuine worship: which I refusing, by many familier instaunces, informed them in this and other matters: so far-forth neuertheless, aduauntaging my selfe by such their superstitious inclynations, as in their vnciuile manners, diet, apparell, dwellinges, prouision, religion, and such like, might tende to the more easier Reformation: in which thing I dealing with them by degrees, & accoording to their Capacities, did in time, profit them to a more ciuile Perfection. And then, whereas they belecued me a Goddesse, I remoued also that profitable Errour, but might not renounce the Gouernment of them, & their Countrie: which charge, with a general consent, would I, or would I not, they haue cast vpon me.

Cap. 59.

AS Dircilla thus parled, and while ſt the Riualles sate yet banqueting in her Bowers, they discryed a great flame assending from out the Sea, whereof Arbaces desirous to know the reason, was thus answered: that certaine of the Ilanders, ignorant of that that was hapned, finding his sheepe in the Docke, had fired both it and all the ballace therein, being a great Masse of treasure: with which newes Arbaces seeming much disquieted, was in conclusion by Dircilla thus appeased.

Ouer-passed Damages, qd. shee, haue made me prouident in following daungers, and therefore (albeit at this time, ignorant of this action, wherin thy presence, Arbaces, might haue bene a countermaunde to our Custome) yet generally before time, as concerning the *Assirians*, haue I commaunded such burninges and ambushmentes: as a thing profitable to our peace, and in perfor-

mance

maunce eaſie, and to that ende continually haue maintayned watches in euerie our Coſtes: by which meanes no Repoꝛter hath allured hether Inuadours, and our own people, keeping within their owne boundes, remaine vncoꝛrupt of ſtraunge manners and practiſes. But alas (and thencearcs were ioyned to woꝛdes) what meaneth, Arbaces, this thy troubled countenaunce foꝛ thy burnt ſhip, as though thou wouldeſt reſaile without me, that in this place haue vowed my buriall: to thoſe white heares of thine, and to one ſo vnfoꝛtunatly croſſed of the woꝛld, delightfull reſt ſhoulde, me-thinkes, ſeeme moꝛe agreable, then doubtful trauels.

If thou, being then a Pꝛince, and yong, couldeſt not in *Media* auoide the *Aſſirian* tyꝛannie, if the Treaſure (I cite thine owne repoꝛte) from thence tranſpoꝛted into the barren Iſlande, cauſing ſuch effuſion of bloode, and in the ende onely poſſeſſed of two, had no vertue becauſe no vſe, if after thine owne deliuerie, in waſſing alſo from that impꝛiſonment Sorares thine vnknowen ſonne, and his companions, the Seas ruled thy Sterne, & the ſtoꝛmes were thy Pilots, if I ſay, in Youth, in Age, in wealth, in wante, on Lande, and on Sea, thou haſt experienced ſuch incertaintie and perils, and laſtly if after all theſe, yea and that when no other then a foule death was expected, thou haſt recouered thy Wife, thy Sonne, thy ſonnes Childꝛen, thy Bꝛother, and with them a Kingdom, yea a kingdome foꝛ pleaſure matching *Bœotia*, and foꝛ pꝛofit comparable to the beſt part in *Nabathia*, why then doeſt thou not, I ſay, renounce thoſe olde perils, and reſt contented with theſe new pleaſures? of which though thꝛee partes were wanting, yet, beleeue me, Arbaces, a contented minde is better then a kingdome, and the woꝛlde, at the beſt, woꝛſer then a Paraſite.

This ſhe ſaide, and Arbaces hauing alreꝺy aſſented in himſelfe, did eaſily conſent to her, as one not ſo much turned by woꝛdes, as tyꝛed with the woꝛlde: who, as alſo

Orchanes

Orchamus, Sorares, Atys, Abynados, and all the *Assirians* esteeme themselues rapt vp into a third heauen, so inspeakable was the ioy of such their meeting, and the pleasure and plentie of this their Ilande. And thus to conclude, those whome I founde in Charons Boate I nowe leaue in Iupiters Boosome.

FINIS.

Sat velle, si non posse.

Imprinted at London by Thomas Purfoote, and are to be sold at his shop ouer-against S. Sepulchres-Church.

Pan his Syrinx,

OR PIPE, COMpact of ſeuen Reedes: including in one, ſeuen Tragical and Comicall Arguments, With their diuers Notes not impertinent:

Whereby, in effect, of all thinges is touched, in few, ſomething of the vayne, wanton, proud, and inconſtant courſe of the World.

*Neither herein, to ſome-what praiſe-*worthie, is prayſe vvanting.

By William Warner.

Vel volo, vel nolo.

AT LONDON,
Printed by Thomas Purfoote,
and are to be ſold at his ſhop ouergainſt Saint Sepulchers Church.

TO THE RIGHT *Worſhipful, Sir Georg Carey Knight,*

Knight Marſhall of her Maieſties moſt Honorable *houſhould, Captaine of the Iſle of Wight, Sonne* and heire apparent to the right Honorable the Lord of Hunſdon, my verie good Lord and Maiſter.



T had (Right Worſhipfull) no ſooner entred my thought to handle ſome Argument, at the firſt, chiefly for mine own exerciſe, but that I found my ſelfe therunto (vn-worthie though a Wrighters creadit) leſſe ſufficient for forme, then preuented of matter: for hardly diſcourſe we that argument, whereof ſomething before, to the like effect is not extant. As for the common text, Loue, I eſteemed the ſame, eſpecially by one man, ſo exquiſitly anotamized, that to others trauailing in the like, being bereft the fleſh, muſcles, veines, ſinewes, blood, and bowels, onely remaine the bones for their exerciſe: and to worke on ſo hard a ſubiect, were (thinke I) to be as vaine

as the Alchimist, who in seeking to perfit wonders for couetousnesse, doth little else then worke himselfe a Begger, with cunning.

In suspence therefore of such my purpose, I hapned into place, where at one time to visite a sicke Gentleman, were assembled a Deuine, a Courtier, a Physition, a Lawyer, a Ciuilian, and a Countrie-man: euery of which busying them selues about the sicke, had left in an out-ward Chamber somthing or other of their ordynarie Attire: anon entred the seuenth man a merrie conceyted Youth, who finding in one place such variety of Apparell, and seuerally one after an other attyring him there withall, behaued himselfe so formally, from the Pulpit to the Plough, from *Paule* his Epistles, to *Ouid* his *de arte amandi*, *Galen* his *de sanitate tuenda*, *Littleton* his Tenures, *Iustinean* his *Pandectes*, and *Virgil* his *Bugloges*, that with no small delight to those present, he not only seemed the same in substance whom de did counterfect in action, but by those his merrimentes, did also minister to the weake gentleman such occasion of extraordinarie motion, and violent laughter, that by the breaking of an Impostume he shortly recouered.

I then obseruing how these diuerse actions, thus deliuered by one Actor, wrought, because of varietie, to the Inspectors a cause of mirth, and to the diseased a cure of his maladie, yet both comming by chaunce, emboldned my selfe in the like manner, though differing in the like matter to huddle vp (rudely I feare) my following Medlie.

The Patronage wherof most humbly I offer vnto your good Worship, with the same hope, which somtimes happned at *Rome* beyond hope to the poore Cobler, whose Crowe, not for *Aue Cæsar* which to pronounce she was purposely taught, but for *opera & impensa periit*, which came aptly and vnlooked for, was therefore accepted of *Cæsar*.

But if nothing herein shall happen either profitable by chaunce

chance as it did to the ſicke, or pleaſant by chance as it did to *Cæſar*, it will then leſſe boote me to ſay my labour is loſt with the Crow, rhen repent me of raſhneſſe as it once did an Ape, who ſomuch preſumed of his furde iacket, that needes he would imitate the Beare to diſpoyle the Bees of their honie: when, ſilie Ape (an adiect improper to an Ape, if not inuironed of Bees) no ſooner had he touched the Hiue to haue taſted the honnie, but that the Bees were as nimble where they founde bare, as was Iacke at his bā-quet: putting him, to late, in remembraunce, that behinde he lay open to ſightes, and naked to ſtinges.

Yet (which beſt is) by ſomuch the leſſe feare I a rough Ayer, by howmuch the more I ſaile vnder a calme Lee, and he that intermedleth not in *Tireſias* his doome, neither awaketh *Iuno* to him, neither needeth hee ſleepe to *Iupiter*.

Onely, if your Worſhip impute not this a preſumption, that I hope after a good ſentence, where I ſhould feare a graue Cenſure, ſuch tolleration may adde freſh Reedes to his Pipe, and he pipe otherwiſe to your prayſe, that with no leſſe affection then dutie, wiſheth vn-vnto your Worſhip all happineſſe, not preiudiciall to true hap-pineſſe.

William Warner.

To the Reader.



Hould I bee curious in applying the forme, or rather deformitie of *Pan*, the Paſtoral God, to the learned my skill might ſeeme no leſſe abſurde, then to the ignoraunt the ſence obſcure. Let it therefore ſuffiſe for the purpoſe, that the Nymph *Syrinx*, in *Arcadia*, in flying *Pan* his louing purſute, was by interceſsions (as poetically it is fabled) tranſformed into an heape of Reedes, which being ſtirred with a gentle blaſt, and *Pan* hearing them to yeelde a ſofte mellodious ſound, with ſeauen of the ſame Reedes, framed to himſelfe the Pipe after her name called *Syrinx*: proportionably to which number, I, a Puple of ſuch a Tutor, haue alſo ſorted out this my Muſick. Muſick I call it, though *Midas*, not for his eares, doth the ſecõd time dare to tearm it melodious: neither, I thinke anye, except perhaps *Satirs*, will vouchſafe to heare it: for only *Mercurie* his Pipe muſt bring *Argus* a-ſleepe, and *Ganymedes* wring the grapes, if *Iupiter* taſte the Nectar: yea, ſo forcible is a firſt Conqueſt to deterre from a ſecond Encounter, that now *Pan*, and his Puples hold themſelues very well content, ſo they can their Plain-ſong, that *Apollo* can deſcant.

And yet, let his coy Prophetiſe preſage harde eventes in her Cell, let the Athenian μισανθρωπος, or Man-hater bite on the Stage, or the *Sinopien* Cynic barke with the Stationer, yet, in *Pan his Syrinx*, wil I pype, at the leaſt to my ſelf.

Vnto whoſe rude Hermonie if, for varietie, any *Tmolus* ſhall liſten, then let ſuch an one imagine, that piping of loue ſome *Polephemus* is a wooer: If handling Argument ſome *Coridon* an Interlocutor: or howſoeuer it bee, ſome *Faunus*, or the Author an Actor: as not daring to be ſo ventorous

terous here, as was one vain-glorious elſ-where, that in try-ing his Texte, as it were by the Touch, to be thought a learned Clearke to an vnlearned Auditorie, hauing rapped out a round deale of Welſh, ſuch, qd. he, are the very wordes in Hebrue.

But ſo farre off am I ſo to reſemble, ſo to deſemble, that might I vtter my ſcarſe indifferent, for exquiſite, yet would I not offer the ſame for excellent: onely to keepe a-looſe from Laborinthes, in which *Minotaur* is redier with a Club, then *Ariadne* with a Clue, ſufficeth to me, might alſo (curteous Reader) ſuch my conſiderate feare ſatisfie you. But what? to father my booke on *Pan*, whoſe bad nature affordeth not ſo good nurture, as to feare an offence, when all, in deede, is nothing more then a fault, and thus ſubmiſſiuely, to craue pardon for mine owne taken paines, and that, perhaps, of ſuch who will ſooneſt miſ-like, what they cannot make like, were as if an Aſſe ſhoulde bringe forth a Gennet, *Pan* a childe altogether vnlike the father, and for my ſelfe in *decorum* to degenerate: for *Pan* being clowniſh, not courtiſh, ſhould not ſing cunningly, if he ſing kindly: and why? only to be fine, were in him a fault: but in vaine is it, I know, that I feare ſuche offence.

But whether wander I? ſuffiſeth it not, that willinglye I haue ſtraitned my ſelfe to time, but that I alſo wilfullye ſo tie my ſelfe to one rude Maſter, that I degreſſe not ſo much as in good maners? not ſo, but if (curtious Reader) not calling into Account my worthineſſe, whiche claimeth leſſe then you ſhould graunte, you accepte of my willingneſſe, which is more thē you can geſſe, he that expecteth only ſuch curteſie, & reſteth moſt deſirous to deſerue it, is alſo therefore and ſtill ſhall be, yours as hee may,

W. Warner.

Arbaces.

Calamus primus.

Cap. I.



At what time Zamicis Ninias, the fift Emperour of *Assiria*, sonne of Ninus, and Ascolanta Semiramis, had in battell banquished th'accursed sonne of his father, and common enemie to mankind Cham, otherwise called the Egiptian Saturne, and sonne of Noa, then vsurping ouer the *Bactrians*: part of his Naute (vpon occasion) returning by *Schythia*, was so dangerously tossed with stormes and seas, that they which seemed euen now most glorious and insolent victors, appeared then most miserable and desolate wretches. Neuertheless, after long dispayre of their liues, great losse of their treasure, and extreme danger of both, the disparkled fleete of the *Assirians* ariued at *Niniue*, one only ship excepted, wherein were imbarked more then a hundred braue soldiours, ouer whom one Sorares was captaine.

Not far from that place whereas the mountains *Taurus* and *Caucasus* begin the headsprings of all the *Asian* Seas, which take their sundrie names according to the channels, whereinto the scattered waters fal, there lieth an Iland, no lesse obscure for the scituation, then vnfrequented for the infertilitie thereof: into this Iland, the ship of Sorares was by tempest driuen. Where hauing

landed his men, and repaired his wetherbeaten Vessell, he determined a further search into the Iland, as well to learne what commodities might there be founde, as also to keepe his soldiors occupied, vntill time might serue more conueniently for their departure away: and therfore marching from his ship in good order, he pearsed a greate part of the same Iland, wherein he found nothing but myrie bogges, or stiepie rockes, not worth the discouerie, much lesse the trauell or hazarde of a conquest: and he made it no wonder that hee founde no people there to defend it, seing he himself thought euery day a peare, vntill he had left it.

At the length, finding the wind to be more fauourable, then their discouerie profitable, his purpose was to retire his men, and forthwith to haue waged anker. But whilste he rested in this resolution, the *Assirians* might espie (descending towards them from a mountaine) two men altogether vnweaponed and naked, saue that their pined bodies were in some parts disorderly couered with a few vnhandsome rags: their lookes seemed wilde, their countinaunces full of heauinesse, their colour swarth, their heare and beardes long, lothsome, and vnkembde, and (to describe them in a word) being men in shape, they seemed monsters in show: but yet such monsters, as were rather to be pitied for their penurie, then to be feared for their crueltie.

These being come before the *Assirians*, albeit their sauage demeanour sauoured more of the place of their present abode, then of the ciuilitie (small though it were) of the countrey wherein they were bread, yet remembring that they were men, & that they were to deale with men, the one of them, whose name was Arbaces sometimes a Duke in *Media*, had these following speeches.

Cap.

Cap. 2.

MOst happie people (to whom otherwise I shoulde haue giuen a contrarie salutation, had not I descried your ship, a friendly instrument to rid you out of so fruitlesse an Iland) I woulde not haue you imagine that wanting swordes to expell you, wee indeuour by words to terrifie you. We are but twaine (as you see) and the only inhabitants of this vninhabitable Iland, yet twaine a greater number then that the plentie of this place is able to satisfie, not for that we are couetous desiring all, but miserable hauing nothing. Our foode is roots, grasse, and leaues, our lodging a Caue framed by nature out of the hard quarrie, our bed mosse, our apparell only such as you see, and the same the vnhappie spoiles of our hapleſſe companions: yet these are trifles in respect of a tragedie.

And for that you haue partlye some experience of the place, though better cheape by all, then we that haue paied therefore to the vttermoste, I leaue you to iudge how it doth battell, by the view of our forlorne personages: saying in a word, that hell is no hell in comparison of this, or that this is hell it selfe without any comparison.

In that we liue we are not vngratefull to the Gods, but in that we are not dead we account our selues vnfortunate: for had death bene plyant to our petions, the end of our liues had bene long since the end of our sorrowes. But hope ouercomming dispaire, for that in the one is possibilitie, in the other no remedie, knowing that as the Gods haue power by iustice to punish, so they haue will by mercie to pardon, and considering that Fortune is painted with two faces, frowning with the one, and smiling with the other, that winter doth bite but sommer burnish, we haue made necessitie a vertue, continuance a custome, and patience our protector.

Whence we are our language bewrayeth, what you are your Enſignes doe manifeſt, but what we demaunde, reſteth as yet vntouched.

We will not feare to ſpeake, though you ſpare not to ſtrike, aboundaunce of hardneſſe hath made vs hardie, the woꝛſt of your malice can be but death, and the beſt thing may betide vs, ſhall bee change of our liues. We are *Meades*, not monſters, ciuile people, not ſauadge Ilanders, baniſhed from home thꝛough your pꝛoſperitie, and betrayed here thꝛough our owne pꝛactiſes, once flying your enmitie, and now following your friendſhip, as men enfoꝛced to the firſt by your wꝛonges, and conſtrained to the later thꝛough our owne wꝛetchednеſſe. With this courage neuertheleſſe (ye *Aſſirians*) we ſollicitate your fauour, that if the old rancour of your grudge, be not yet qualified with the newe ſpectacle of our preſent calamities, our liues (know ye) haue not as yet taken ſo muche the propertie of theſe hard Rockes, but that they will eaſily giue entrance to your reuenging weapons. Albeit, by the way, it might be ſayde, that as you are to deale roughly with thoſe that ſtand againſt you in combate, ſo ought you to deale mercifullye with thoſe which at your feete lie pꝛoſtrate, foꝛ in the one your courage is not moꝛe magnificent, then in the other your charitie meritoꝛious: and though it be gloꝛious to ouercome by battell, yet is it moꝛe gloꝛious to be ouercome by pittie. Foꝛ (alas) ſhall men whom nature hath endued with reaſon, and vnited in oꝛiginall amitie, by occaſion of any coꝛꝛupt accident, continue moꝛe malitious than vnreaſonable oꝛ ſenceleſſe creatures? Doth not the Plantane pꝛofit the toade in diſburdening her of the ſuperfluitie of poyſon? and the ſame neuertheleſſe, ſtand vs in ſteede to many good purpoſes, oꝛ doth it derogate any thing from vertue, if by our induſtrie wee better the vitious? oꝛ ſhall wee cut of thoſe limbes that are now ſound, becauſe the ſame were once ſoꝛe?

Well,

Well, if remembring what we haue bene, you wil not conceaue what we would be, if our humble submission be thought an insufficient reconciliation, if you feare vs that haue neither will nor power to harme you, if you wil not (which is the summe of our sute) deliuer vs from hence, that of our own accord are falne into your handes: if (I say) it be your pleasures that we shall not weepe for vnexpected kindnesse, whom you shall not enforce to dread for any practised torments, then assure your selues, you cannot be more tirannous, then we patient, and our death shall be more dishonourable to you, then our graues discontenting to vs.

The only thing we craue is to be conuaied out of this Iland, a small petition, and easily performed: the poizinesse of twaine will not be burdenous to your barke, and the hyer for our passage shall lighten your hartes. But to what purpose should I vse more speeches, if you bee mercifull enough is sayd, if mercilesse much more wil not serue.

Cap. 3.

HOw rufully these words were vttered by the miserable *Meade* and how effectually the same wrought in the hartes of the *Assirians*, the passioned gestures of the one did testifie, and the pittifull regards of the other witnesse. Let it suffice, that the sillie soules were pitied, their pensiuenesse comforted, their bodies apparelled, al former enmitie pardoned, and libertie promised.

But see what an euill euent followed so good an hansel. In the night before the *Assirians* should depart, Sorares calling diuers the cheefe of his soldiors to supp with him in his cabben, enuited amongst the rest the two *Meades*, and after supper ended, he intreated the miserable Duke to declare by what mishap they chanced into that harborlesse Iland, whereupon Arbaces proceeded in this maner.

Albeit (good Sorares, and you the reſt of our benefactors) the remembraunce of our paſſed ſorrowes will bee little leſſe then a preſent death to our ſpirits, the whiche without anguiſh we cannot rehearſe, nor you without pittie heare, yet ſhall you not find vs daintie to aunſwere your requeſt, whom we haue found ſo forward to yield vs releefe.

Aboue two hundred yeares of mine age are alreadie paſſed, a ſhort time, if not lengthened out with continuall ſorrowes, the roote therof chiefly ſpringing from *Aſſiria*: and yet (good Sorares) thinke not that hauing cauſe to curſe your countriemen that baniſhed vs into this Iland, that therfore we will ceaſe our prayers for you, by whom our deliuerie is promiſed, ſeeing why wee ſhould malice you we can render no reaſon, but why we ſhould honour you we haue good occaſion.

The purporte of this my ſpeeche is to be conſtrued to this purpoſe, that as we are not to accuſe you for our receaued iniuries at the handes of your predeceſſors, ſo is it not neceſſarie that in malice you become their ſucceſſors: for if we ſhall make their olde controuerſies, our newe quarrels, it will followe, that firſt the worlde and all thinges ſhall ceaſe to be, before ſtrife and diſcorde ſhall ceaſe to grow. But hitherto I haue bene rather tedious to your eares, then aunſwering to your demaundes, yet pardon my beginning, and with patience tarrie an ende.

It is a worlde to note the wondrous alteration of all thinges, euen of late dayes, for omitting to ſpeake of the time before the generall deluge, I will onely glaunce at the ſuperfluitie of this our preſent age.

It hath bene, yea within the time of my remembraunce, that men thought themſelues more ſure in their wilde Caues, then now ſafe in their walled Caſtles, better conterting themſelues with the vnforced fruitfulneſſe of the earth, then now ſatisfied with their fruitleſſe compounds

pounds enuyred by art, the ſimplicitie of nature preſcribed vnto them an abſolute law, but ouermuch curioſitie now, ſubuerteth both law and nature. What ſpeake I of part? when it is manifeſt that no ſooner golde and ſiluer the Ambaſſadors from hell, had inſinuated themſelues into the hartes of men, but that a generall ſubuertion was made of all.

Nemroth then taking vpon him an vnknowne title, not euer heard of before in all the world, much leſſe in *Caldia*, became a king in *Babilon*: who, by ſuttletie hauing wone the harts of the vnpolitick people, by that meanes got them vnder the yoke of ſeruitude. Nemroth being dead, his ſonne Belus hunting after greater ſuperiorite than was by his father newly eracted, pretended by warres to dilate his dominions, whoſe dreadfull purpoſe being by death made fruſtrate, his ſonne Ninus, your late Emperor and our then perſecutor, did execute. Making his new inuention of warre & battell not only terrible to thoſe that did taſte it, but horrible to vs whiche as yet did not feele it.

After a while it came to paſſe, that we who hetherto did only heare much miſchiefe of warre reported, did now ſuffer the effects of that, which of long time we feared: for Ninus landing an armie of ſoldiours in *Media*, obtayned an eaſie victorie againſt vs bad warriours, and in reſpect of holdes, armour and artilerie, a people vtterlye naked.

Ninus being thus conqueror, & we conquered, our king Farnus, his wife and vii. children murdered, cõtinual likelihoods of an vniuerſal ſlaughter ſtill appearing, & the deſolation of the whole countrey being generally expected for, diuers Nobles of *Media*, and others not of the baſeſt calling, to the nũber of 100 & vpwards, of ẏ which nũber, & the whole number now liuing we two are, hauing conuayed into a ſhippe the golde and cheefeſt treaſure of our ſlaughtered king, and rather truſting to the incertaintie

of

of the ſeas, then to the inhumanitie of the *Aſſirian* ſoldiors, in an vnluckie hower hoiſted vp our ſailes, leauing with teares our waſted countrey, as men compelled to ſearch after ſome new habitation.

The ſeas we paſſed were numberleſſe, the ſorrowes we ſuffred were greeuous, the daungers we eſcaped were perilous, how farre we had ſayled we account not, howe farre we ſhould ſaile, we knew not, where to ariue wee were ignorant, and all places (if farre enough from the *Aſſirians*) ſeemed to vs indifferent.

In the end, being no leſſe vnfortunate in our ſeafaring, then vnexpert in the new art of nauigation, ſeing our victels to waſte, our veſſel to leake, and our tackling to faile, ſuch was then our comfortleſſe diſpaire, that hauing no hope at all to eſcape the threatning waues, it did only forthinke vs that we forſooke our natural graues, in our natiue countrie, to finiſh our liues without honour amongſt the mercileſſe ſurges. But corke wanteth waite to ſinke, and lead is ouer heauie to ſwimme, we were not ſo happy as to ſuffer ſhipwrack on the ſeas, being predeſtinate to ſorrowes on the ſhoare.

At the length we eſpied this Iſlande, and making to the ſame, nere about the place wher this ſhip now rideth, we ſtroke ſaile: and (vnhappie men) ſo ioyfull to vs ſeemed this our ariuall, that then promiſing to our ſelues ſecuritie, whē we did but newly enter into our ſorrowes, we leapt from out our ſhip, with mindes neuer to reenter the ſame, kiſſing the very earth that firſt receaued vs a ſhore: this hapned about mid-day, but before night, our mirth was thus turned to mone.

Not hauing, as yet, made any ſacrifice to the Gods, before ſearch of the profit, or diſprofit of the place, any conſideration care or forecaſt of afterclaps whatſoeuer, we began to vnfraught our ſhip, laying our gold and treaſure on the nert ſhoar. Scarcely had the laſt man brought the laſt burthen from the ſhip, but that a contention fell betwixt

twixt two of the noble men (ſeuerally before time noted of Ambition and Anarice) about the diuiſion of the ſame treaſure. And ſuch was their madneſſe, that albeit their preſent plight rather required lowly teares, than haughtie titles, yet Ambition not yeelding an inch to Auarice, either of them ſought by farre diſcentes to fetch their petigrees from Iapeth and Madus, of whom we are the offſpring, as nere as poſſibly they might.

Amongſt the inferior ſort, there was one Chebron, a luſtie taule fellow, of a hote cholericke complexion, and an inuincible courage: he ſeeing the controuerſie, that now began more & more to encreaſe, bending his browes and laying hand on his weapon, ſpake many words much diſpleaſing to either of the contentious competitours. And were it not (Sorares) that I ſhoulde cloy your eares with ouer lōg a diſcourſe, I would alſo repeat his words, the which I yet remember, as (in my conceit) wel worthy the noting.

Here Sorares interrupting him ſayd: If (good my friend) it ſhal not be troubleſome for you to ſpeake, it ſhal not be tedious for vs to heare, our dayes worke is done, and it is yet but early nights, let thoſe that will ſleepe, as for my ſelfe I am prouided to wake.

And were I alſo able (qd. Arbaces) to counterfeite the magnanimitie that then appeared in his countinaunce, I would not willingly pretermit the ſame, but theſe were the words that Chebron then vſed.

Cap. 4.

IF ſo be (my dere friends and countreimen) the iuuaſion of the *Aſſirians*, the ruine of *Media*, and our late paſſed perils, had ben to me by oracle or otherwiſe reuealed, I then would haue made you acquainted before hand with that which was threatned to follow: ſo might wee either haue pacified the Gods by prayer, encouraged our

ſelues to abyde the daunger, or elſe before it had hapned haue dyed for ſorrow: but, contrary to our expectations wee haue auoyded the outrage of our foes, and though hardly yet ſafly eſcaped the ſeas.

But nowe, if I that cannot diuine as a prophet, prenoſticate as an Aſtrologer, inuocate as a Nigromancer, obſerue as an Augur, interpret as a Dreamer, calculate as a Wyzarde, or caſt figure as an Arteſte, ſhoulde ſay vnto you, that the miſchiues yet behinde, are more & greater than whereof we haue already our ſhares, you (perhaps) thinking it impoſſible, would eſteeme it as a fable, and accompt me as a foole.

O people for your inconſiderate preciſhnes to bee pitied, are your eyes cleare and yet will you counterfaite blyndnes? haue you your ſenſes, and yet will you ſeeme ſenſles? and ſeeing imminent diſtruction, dare you neuertheles be deſperate? haue you bene ouercome by men, betweene whom and you ought to be an equalitie, and yet are you feareles of monſters, betweene whom and you conſiſteth no indifferencie? muſe not at that which I haue ſpoken, for you are likely to find more thē monſters, being to encounter with Ambition and Auarice, thone by preſumption, woulde rente the gods from the ſkyes, and thother reſt vncontented to poſſeſſe their feates, vnles both be incountred, neither of both can be conquered, ſuch is their vndeuiſible properties.

Know yee not (my friendes) that the ambitious perſon, neither hauing gentry to elate him, reuenewes to inrich him, perſonage to adorne him wit to aduaunce him, good qualities to preferre him, or any one vertue to commend him, if by the benefit of fortune her blyndnes, he attayneth to dignity hee forthwith becommeth a lordelike tyrant, a vainglorious Magnifico, careles of other mens profit, and arrogant of his own preferment: his countinaunce is faſtidious, his ſpeech loftie, his meditations aſpiring, not brooking his ſuperiour, nor bearing his equall

quall, to his inferiors burdinous, to all men cumberſom & not remẽbring his old friends that forgeth his newſelfe.

If beggers thus ſet on horſebacke ride a galop, let vs then make accompt, that theſe claiming by gentry will ply the ſpurre. Briefly what can I ſay more, thẽ in effect is already experienced: ſee you not or are you willingly blinde? how theſe two gallants onely remembring what they ſometime were but not acknowledging what they preſently be, make no queſtion of our ſafety, but fall to quarrels for their priuate ſuperiority: not conſidering ỳ fire once ſquenched forgoeth both heate & brightnes, that graſſe once mowed, looſeth both ſap and greenes, & that a noble man exiled, if not of noble birth, yet of authority and honorable eſtimation ſtandeth diſgraded.

But let it be that baniſhment is no diſpargement to birth, yet ſhould we for our own aſſurance, reſpect the ſequell, & haue an eie to their inclinations whom we admit to rule. For mine own part I carry this opinion, that had theſe men no other fault, yet are they therefore vnfit for gouernment, becauſe ſo forward to gouerne: authoritie ſhould be denyed to ſuch as deſire it, & offred to thoſe that refuſe it, for a wiſe man and one well minded, neuer receiueth an office, vnles thereunto compelled, as foreſeeing ỳ the ſame to his body ſhalbe a trauell, to his conſcience a care, that he ſhalbe marked of all, enuied of many, & cannot but daunce in a net. But ſuch as are theſe our high minded intruders (whom we may therefore call ignoble, becauſe not vertuous, as hauing already daſhed at home againſt the rockes of ignomie, and now here entred into vtter ſhipwracke of the ſmall remaine of their credit,) theſe I ſay chaleng preeminence not for deſertes, but of duty: exacting ỳ of vs through ambition, which they can neither diſcreatly diſcharge, nor we dangerles diſpoſe: & yet like as violent waters are prone to often eruptions, becõming ſhalloweſt within their ordinary channels, ſo proud perſons are euermore capable of higher dignities,

though not wel able, to exercise their present meane offices: still doth the proud man flatter himself in that that he would, not esteeming of himself in any point as he ought.

There is hardly that thing so good, but there may be a better, or that thing so bad, but there may be a worser: the wilde olive is sauerie, but the ripe figge is sweeter, the Tiger mangleth with her teeth, but the Basilique murdereth with her eye: there is no beautie without some blemish, nor any blemish that is not either naturall, or necessarie: no perfection with some imperfection, and yet the same imperfection either to be cured, or tollerable: only Ambition, vntill of it own selfe it be deuoured, is bloodlesse for blushing, and intractable for taming, penurie doth not decrease it, and plentie doth increase it, in wel doing it is insolent, in ill doing impudent.

As for the other monster Auerise, a little varying from Ambition in qualitie of affection, but not in quantitie of affecting, this (I say) is still hunting, but euermore hungering, still praying, but continually pining, still getting but neuer gaining, and still hoording, but neuer hauing. For as the hollow spoute receaueth much water, and yet retaineth nothing but ayre, so the couetous man getheretb much wealth, and yet possesseth nothing but cares, and only he of all monsters, in his rauenous deuouring is vnsatiable: for whereas commonly all other vices by old age are impaired, his only vice is thereby repaired, the nerenesse of the graue the rather adding to nigardise.

O most miserable man, to whome is wanting as well that which he possesseth, as that which he wanteth, hee hungereth after that which he coueteth, and feareth to lose that which he enioyeth, and as in aduersitie he craueth prosperitie, so in prosperitie he feareth aduersitie, in his superior he dreadeth force, in his inferiour he mistrusteth theft, such (I say) is his wretched estate, that he presently suffereth all and so much as he feareth. Therefore is it a true saying, that nothing may bee wished more

harmefull

harmefull to a couetous man, then long life. And (trust me) if we consider with what toile wealth is got, with what danger it is kept, what charines in vsing it, what detriment in abusing it, and with what anguish we leaue it, then shall we find more profite in pouertie, then quietnesse in riches.

One thing it is to be happie, and an other to bee riche. but detestable is the exchange, when to follow golde wee forsake the Gods: as no doubt doth the couetous man, of whom what should I more say? but that his life is detested of many, his death desired of all, and being dead, the poore man curseth, his heire reioyceth, the saints weepe, and the diuels laugh.

How harmeful (ye *Medes*) these two monsters haue bene, all the world hath found, we haue felt, and more shal feele, except being yet but yong Snakes, they be cut off, before they grow to be old Serpents.

If these two iollie Champions had bene well counceled, and not so couitous, or more pollitick, and lesse proud: then this vnnecessarie strife shoulde haue bene the last thing of a thousand, for our behoofes much more necessarie: Neither would they haue perswaded themselues to be Kinges not being assured of subiects, nor haue contended for a kingdome, not hauing conquered an Iland.

Alas how much more vnfortunate are we in transporting these reliques of gentrie, and small remnant of treasure into Scithia, then in leauing the blood of our friends, and masses of wealth behind vs in *Media*.

But if you can be content to cherpe in cages, that may sing in the bushes, if you can disgest that these feast with full dishes, whilste you shall fast with emptie bellies, that they sing whilst you sorrow, that they bee adorned with chaines of gold in token of their superfluitie, whilst you shall be fettered with yrons, as pledges of your necessity. If it be your pleasures to make them your Lordes, and you to become their slaues, yet shall you vnderstand that

Chebron hath ſet an hier prize of his freedome, then to exchange it for ſuch bōdage. And though it be not my meaning to be ſuperiour to the worſt here, yet thinke I my ſelfe equall to the better of theſe two, and he which hath deſerued any thing at all, hath deſerued more then either of them: only their new courage ſeemeth ſtraunge to me, ſo well acquainted with their late cowardiſe.

Are not theſe the men? or were they then metamorphoſed, from Egles, to Owles, or from Lions to Lambes: that whileſt we applyed the pumpe, reeling vp and downe the ſhip could naught elſe but purge: that whilſt we laboured on the hatches, lay quaking in their cabbens? Yes verely, theſe iolly fellowes are the verie ſame, to one of which (for not aboue one may be receiued into a kingdome) you may reſigne the pleaſures of your ouerpaſſed perrils: as for my ſelfe, I more account of libertie then eſteeme of ſuch pollicie, and am more zealous of your welfare, then carefull of mine owne ſafetie, fearing more a comming then our common ſcourge.

Cap. 5.

THus much Chebron with a couragious countinaunce ſpake, and was about to haue ſaid more, but that he eſpied one of thoſe two againſt whome he thus enuaied (impatient of his ſpeeches) to aime a dart againſt his head: wherefore the ſame anger that before had occaſioned him to ſpeake, and then had tied his tongue, moued him now to vſe his weapon, the which he pearced into the bowels of him that threatned the flinging of the dart: and with the like ſucceſſe hee alſo diſpatched the other ſtanding amaſed in beholding his dying companion, ſaying: happily you ſhall find hell a gulfe as vnrepleatable, as your ſelues haue bene men vnſatiable.

Beleeue me (Sorares) whether it were the vigorious force of magnanimitie, that then proceeded from him (for

I may terme him magnanimious, whome neither flattering, nor frowning fortune can alter, that preferreth mediocritie before superfluitie, a common profit before a priuate gaine, and an honourable death, before a thraled life) or whether it were the timerous astonishment then planted in vs, that gaue spurres to these his proceedinges I know not: but most certaine it is, that like as ỹ shepheard entreth into the Coote, there sequestring from amidst the flockes, what sheepe it pleaseth him to appoint to the slaughter, so Chebron, euen in the middle of vs, on these two perfourmed this tragedie: so courageous was he, and so amased were we.

Anon, as our appaled spirits were reuiued, we began diuerslie to construe of Chebron his wordes, & to conceaue of his deedes, and being amongst our selues diuided, one part protested that he had wel done, an other company detested his deede, and some not intermedling at all, stoode as neuters. The more that Chebron intreated the factious accomplices with reason, the more they threatned him and his adherents with rigour, so that seeing them desperately addicted to assaute, he vnwillingly prouided to resist: whereupon they fell from brawling to blowes, and from wrangling to wounds, and he that now killeth, is himselfe by and by killed.

Whilst we persist in this same franticke mutinie, making horrible hauocke one of an other: Those before named persons which either for feare durst not, or for policie would not be dealers in this quarrell, these men had loden themselues with great store of the treasure, & minding whilst we were thus busied in the fray, to haue made a mart of our miseries, drew towards the ship, with purpose to haue sailed away.

But a common souldiour, a factious fellow, smelling out this their pretence, and getting aboord before any of these finchers might enter, had spied the same in sundrie places, the whiche hauing of it selfe sufficiente

of

of combuſtable matter, was quickly conſumed.

This we eſpied, and as we could not then intend it for the fray, ſo remained we ſo farre of from ſquenching the flame, that it rather reioyced vs of the ſo preuenting of thoſe baſtards, (as we did then terme them) then once thought on the miſery that hereof enſued, for hauing gold we vainly perſwaded our ſelues not to want any thing. But by this meanes thoſe that woulde thus haue fledde, were now enforced to take a part in our ciuil fight.

Still perſeuer we in mangling and murthering one an other, vntill Chebron and his adherentes had vtterly confounded the aduerſe party, and that of an hundred men and more that ariued here, within fiue or ſixe howers only xvi. remained vnſlaine, yet we (though ſo ſmall a nũber to deuide ſo great a bootie) in the ſharing had well nere begone a ſecond broile, and that day (I would wee had bene ſo happie) had ben the laſt to vs al, had not night preuented our harebraine proceedings, and darkeneſſe ſtayed our deſperateneſſe. But daylight thus failing vs, euery man beſtowed himſelfe vpon a ſeuerall pile of the heaped treaſure, keeping a wakefull & ſuſpicious watche, of all that night.

As ſoone as the gray morning appeared, and that wee beheld the wooluiſh aſpects of our own ſelues with blood embrued, the dead carkaſes of our ſlaughtered companions, and looking towards the ſea, remembred the burning of our ſhip, and periſhing of our victailes, then, then, our furious fearceneſſe was changed to fearefull fantaſies, and our headie raſhneſſe to helpleſſe repentance. But what dwell I longer on this miſchiefe, the matter being much more dolorous that reſteth yet vnreſited.

When our handes were thus ouerſoone filled with blood, & that our eyes had once late emptied their teares, although our ſore limmes require reſt, yet our ſharpe appetites hunger for foode: and therefore as well pricked forwards by hunger, as deſirous to be inſtructed what a

profitable

profitable plot we had picked out for our here abode, wee discouered into the farthest circuit of this Iland. But the same seemed abhorred of the gods, and we found it vtterly abandoned of men, beastes, fowles, fruites, and euery other thing necessarie for mans behoofe: and (worser then so) we being shipplesse, and on euery side with main Seas enuironed, did also remain hopelesse of our deliuerie from hence.

Now in this melancholie, euery man laid violent hand vpon Chebron, fathering our woes vpon his late iniective wordes, whereby (in my conceit) hee rather intented quietnesse than pretended any suche quarrels: howbeit our mutinous minds altered with the time and troubles, made a newe construction of his zealous meaning, and doe what he could, we pressed him to death vnder an huge heape of golde, whose bones vnder the pile are yet extant.

After this, some of our companie not able to abide the extremitie of this climate, the stench of the ayre, and sterilitie of the Iland, by mutuall consents, made mutuall dispatch of their own persons, and shortly after vntimelye death finished the liues of the residue, who being far more fortunate in dying, then wee in suruiuing, lefte onelye vs two the vnhappy inheritours of these vnspeakeable calamities.

Thus haue you heard (Sorares) the effect, though not the full of our tragicall ariuall, and to morrowe wee will gratifie you with so much gold, as shall partlye counteruaile your great curtesie, though not comparable to the conceaued comfort of our promised deliuerie.

Arbaces thus finished his lamentable discourse, and Sorares dismissed the whole company euery man to his lodging.

Cap. 6.

THe next morning Arbaces and the other *Meade* his fellow conducted the *Assirians* vnto the piles of gold, being in a manner ouergrowne with mosse and rust, with which bootie the *Assirians* with merrie harts and many hands, had quickly fraughted their ship.

But vnceasable are the mischiefes that golde procureth, and vnsatiable are the mindes of couetous men.

Sorares being thus spead of this bootie, and hauing consulted with his countrimen of a further inquisition, began now to exact at the handes of the poore *Meades* a greater pray then wherein they coulde satisfie their auerise, hunting after that whiche was not there to bee had, and (seeking as it were) to extort fire out of water, they would not be perswaded, but the guiltlesse soules had reserued vnto themselues some greater treasure: denyall might not acquite them, nor intreaty saue them from tortures: so that hauing already passed some, to them were threatned other greater except they would promise, what (poore wretches) they could not performe.

But in the end this diuilish deuise of the *Assirians* hastened their owne detrament; who thus dreaming of hidden treasure, for search thereof, had scattered themselues, without any one man remaining aboorde into euerye corner of the Iland. When in the meane time, Arbaces and his fellow remembring how hardlye they had bene hampered, and were still indangered vnder those vngratefull men, whom they had euen now so bountifullye enriched, taking therefore that time as a fit opportunitie to auoyde their impaires, boorded the vnmanned ship of Sorares: and cutting the cables, launch out at the pleasure of ỹ windes and the waues.

The *Assirians* anone (contrarie to their expectations) perceauing their ship aflote, ran like mad men vp & downe

the

the shoare, where by outward signes, and sorrowfull gestures, as wringing their handes, howling out, and beating their brestes, they signified such apparent motions of their perplexed minds, that euen the two *Meades*, experienced of the self same distresse, and moued with compassion towards the vngrateful people, indeuoured in al they possibly might, to returne back againe in their succour: but all in vaine, doe what they might, contrarie windes resisted their mercifull meaning, carrying them quite away with an inualuable fraught of that treasure, whiche (as before) had chiefly procured all their troubles.

Whome we leaue safely to arriue in *Sarmatia*, and Soranes with his couetous *Assirians* shut vp in the barren Iland, as meritorious possessors of so miserable a possessiō.

Of all which, of their successe, and of other not impertinent accidents, more remaineth hereafter to be read, in that which is herein prosecuted.

(·.·)

Thetis.

Calamus ſecundus.

Cap.7.



IN this meane while, after that Zamicis his imperiall fleete (excepte that ship of Sorares) was arised in *Aſſiria*, albeit the vãquiſhing of ỹ *Bactrians* moued a cõmon mirth to al, yet the lacke of Sorares & his company cauſed perticuler moan to ſome, and that eſpecially to Atys and Abynados, two braue youthes, the ſonnes of the ſame Sorares, whome at his departure to the *Bactrian* warres hee had left at *Niniue*.

Theſe two youthfull gentlemen and brethren tooke the miſſe of their father with ſuch impatiẽce, that neither intiſed with their pleaſaunt welfare at home, nor dreading whatſoeuer dangers might happen them abroad, nor yet diſſwaded by any their deareſt friendes, did voluntarilye vow themſelues to continuall trauels, vntill either they ſhould heare tidings of the life or death of their father, or at the leaſt wiſe, their own dayes ſhoulde be determined by their vnknown deſtinies.

In

In this purpose therefore, accompanyed with diuerse other gentlemen, whose friendes were also willing, in a well-pauished ship they launche frō *Nineuie*: and hauing sailed through many seas, were now entred into that chanell, whereas the riuer *Araxes* leauing the sea *Caspium*, both glide by the desertes of *Scythia*. Here on the top of an hill, they descry an auncient castell, and minding there (as in diuerse other places before) to learne tydinges of that wherunto their trauel tended, they came ashoare: and whilest the rest were otherwise busyed, Atys and Abynados went vnto and entred the castell: wherein they found no lyuing creature, but yet respecting the small ostentatiō and curiositie of that nation, brauely furnished with all thinges necessary.

At the last, entring into an inner roome, as it were a parlour, in the middle whereof on an harth was a great fier, looking vp by chaunce into the roofe, they espie hanging smooke-dryed three quarters of a man, as it seemed to them, not long before so dismembred.

If erewhile the ayre abroade was greeuous for colde, or nowe the fire here comfortable for heate, this horrible sight made them forgetfull of both: what might be deemed of this monstrous spectacle they stand not to descant, neither durst they hazard to stay the enquiry, but esteeme it better pollicie to feare & fly what they did not yet feele, then to feele what they did feare & might flie: & therefore, such was their post-haste to be gone, and so great their feare in running away, that though to others they ran as Harts, yet to themselues they crept as Snayles, thinking euery threashoole a thicket, and euery rithe a ridge in their way.

But whilest they thus skudde in their amasednes, at the foote of the hill they were encountred by the Lorde of the castell, wayted vpon with a number of seruauntes, some of them loaden with sundrie beastes by them newely chased in those desertes.

The affrighted gentlemen being now come into the presence of the *Scithian* Lord, at whose handes they onely expected some rare tyrannie, not looking amongst those barbarous people, especially in that place, to finde at all any ciuile intertainement, were by him neuertheleſſe curteouſly saluted, and at the length moꝛe vppon importunate intreaty on his parte, then any willingnes of their owne (foꝛ his faire speech might not shake off their fearefull coniectures) foꝛ that night entertained his gueſtes.

Cap. 8.

When the *Scythians* had (according to their cookrie) digbted the venſon they had killed, part whereof they boyled in beaſtes hides, and other part they bꝛoyled on the coles, and when the *Scythian* Lord had sate a ſmall while at ſupper, he roſe vp ſuddenly, vnlocking a ſtrong doꝛe opening into that parlor, and then ſitteth him downe againe at the table.

Anone after this came foꝛth a Ladie moſt ritchly attired, in geſture ſo comely, in countinaunce ſo louely, in face ſo amiable, in bodie ſo pꝛopoꝛtionable, and in euerie part ſo foꝛmall, that nature might not poſſiblie woꝛke moꝛe beautie in any creature, oꝛ any creature better become ſuch largeſſe of nature: howbeit, as the hangings vp of a net directly againſt the ſonne, doth partly obſcure the bꝛighnes of his beames, ſo penſiuenes ſeemed ſomewhat to diminiſh the featured regardes of this beautiful Paragone.

Harde by was pꝛouided a ſide booꝛde, and there (hauing made lowe curteſie) ſhe ſitteth hir downe: pꝛeſentlie whereupon her meſſe was furniſhed, onely with two oꝛ three bꝛoyled collops, cut from of the dead mans his quarters, and beſoꝛe her was ſet water in his ſkull: then one of the ſeruauntes taking a ribbe out of a boꝛe, pounded

dreth the same very small, and putteth it into the water.

Better, or other victuals then these (sweete soule) shee got not, and albeit her puling appetite disdayned so lothsome a diet, yet either must she thus feede, or else pine without foode: so that rather enfeebling then filling her weake stomake with these dainties, she sheddeth more teares then the quantitie of water she drinketh, and feedeth as sparingly as her fare was homely, for soone was she satisfied and as suddenly put againe vnder locke by her ouer vngentle gaoler.

No maruell though Atys and Abynados were nowe afresh drowned in their dompes, and had small liking to their meate, who not yet freed of their former feare, sawe newe occasions of greater dreade: they pitie the Ladie & doubt their owne saftie, wishing her at large, and themselues out of ieopardie: for (thinke they) seeing this tyrant handleth thus vngently so gallant a Ladie, making the murdered carcases of men meate for those whome he hath reserued to further miserie, what shall become of vs wretches, how are we intrapped, and what death hath he for vs prepared?

The *Scythian* Lorde perceauing by their outwarde shewes their inwarde feare, cheereth them vp with a curtious welcome saying: gentlemen, you (perhaps) from whence you are come, accustomed to fare more finely, cānot acquaint your selues to feede here so grosely, yet we that are the chiefest in *Scythia* doe couet no better, and could be contented with worse, not esteeming anything or any more to be needefull, but onely that and so much as is presently necessarie: full furnished tables (say we) breede feeble surfets, but meane repastes make healthfull persons.

We know that fewe thinges fulfileth nature, that superfluitie is a meere vanitie, that ouermuch meate soyleth the senses, that beanie cuppes make lighte heades, that curious Cookes make carefull maisters,

that

of him, for a Fly was not then an Egles flight, Opheltes not stouped but to Phæmonoe: as for Alcippe, being in his eie but as a Sipher in Augurisme, shee might come to him vnregarded, and passe from him vnremembred: yet wanted she not pacience to suffer his vnkinde prankes, nor diligence to further with her Mistresse his vnwarrãted pastime, yea so farre as &c. extended: so that contenting her selfe with part and not contending for the principall, she sticked not vpon the Substance, but was satisfied with ỹ shadow, Phęmonoe had the game, Alcyppe naught else but the gase: all which (in respect of the necessitie) she did gladly view in silence, as dreading otherwise, to lose the aduauntage of that sorrow.

But when (as before is saide) Philargus had brought Opheltes in displeasure with the king, and discredit with the people, & that his surfited Prodigalitie was throughly purged with a coinlesse Vomit, it came now to passe, that Phæmonoe her loue did suddenly labour of a Consumption, his new want disabled him to pay for his shot, and her old wont disalowed him to runne on the score: yea and that with such contemptious coynesse, and vnkinde disdaine did she handle him, that had not will vterly ouer-ruled his wit, euen such her entertainemẽt, might easily haue allaied the heat of his inordinate passions, and staied the frenzie of his madding dotage.

The which notwithstanding, the miserable man (and the more miserable in respect of this his disalowable affection, then in that beggery had brought him on his knees, and the king his sentence of banishment, stoode presently vpon execution) would by no repulse surcease to houer, where by no request (made hee neuer so fayre a pitch) hee coulde seaze.

Now with the increase of his lawlesse desire, ensued the decrease of the lymited peare, wherein he was either to bring forth Alcippe, or fayling thereof to forsake his countrie: what remedy then remaineth but of two euils

to

to make choise of the lesser: but could Opheltes so do? no, his vnruly humour had brought him so far out of square, that he rather doth hazard to be hailed to death (for death was insident to his tariance) out of the slaunderous house of a shameless harlot, then with assurance of life, to vse the benefit of the more fauourable sentence, which was banishment: & yet (inchaunted miser) what else did he with ỹ price of his deadly aduenture? thē buy the emptying of his eyes of restlesse teares, and the sundering of his hart with continuall sighes, at her handes, & in her presence, whose wilfull coynesse was such, that neither would shee heare him patiently, nor answere him but proudly.

The yeare was now finished, longer thē which Opheltes was not to make aboade in *Lydia*, when Phamonoe, not brooking the cumbersome haunt of so beggerly a Guest, with outragious tearmes flatly forbadde him her house, threatning otherwise, to procure against him the execution of the king his Sentence: wherefore withdrawing him selfe into a solitarie place, with bitter tearmes among, he complaineth in this maner.

The time was, yea (vngratious Cast-away) the time was, that bearing an hart vndismaied of banishment, thou diddest also find hap, vnlooked for, to recouer thy libertie, but I that without craning in ayde of any, could then recouer my selfe from the trecherie of Fortune, am not now by the assistance of any Fortune, to be rescued from the tyranny of mine owne folly: such a god is loue, or rather such a diuell is lust that onely is strong to my discomfiture, & wanteth not force to drawe me, euen willingly to distruction: but (for of thinges before hande done I am priuie, & of an action already in framing wel may I prenosticate) as moisture is insident to water, so is mishap an appendant to my destinie: yea it is euident (I say euident, because as heretofore my life, so at this instant my death shall affirme my latter Astrologie infallable) that the fauourable Aspect of no Planet, hath bene qual-

lefying to the luckles Starre of my Natiuity, and therefore haue I founde all fortunes, preuailing to the drifte of this Catastrophe: an ende (in deede) base and beastly, when the matter thereof is Lust, the meane a Strumpet, and the manner a violente stopping of myne owne breath. But what shouldest thou longer liue (Opheltes) hauing so good opportunitie, to performe the prodigious execution of thy Destinie, and by one death to ende infinite sorrowes? In saying this, and whilest he resolutely hastned to haue strangled himselfe, by good happe in came Alcippe: who discrying the melancholy pretence of her miserable husbande, and seing the dispayre whereinto hee was then falling, with bapored eyes offereth this kinde duety, to the onely Seedsman of all her sorrowes, saying.

Cap. 50.

IT is (qd. shee) contrarie to man-hood, euen in extremyties of euils not to bee constant, but wilfully peeuish, and peruerse is hee that forgoeth comfort, whilest hee forsaketh counsell: although the man bee tearmed foole-hardie that dareth to followe the aduyse of a woman, yet beleeue mee (Opheltes) as it is not incredyble, but that a Mouse may gnawe a Lion out of a ginne, so is it not impossible, but that I may at the least, giue intermission to thy griefe.

Long did I practise thy cure, but therein performe no other then myne owne care, in preferring thy bootelesse loue to mercylesse Phæmonoe, but I nowe finde, and I wouldo thou couldest also feele, that longer to bleede of that vaine, is to leaue thy body bloodlesse, thy heade witlesse, and thy friendes hopelesse of thy recouery: what meanest thou, Opheltes, to straine out a gnat and to swallow vp a Cammell? tearming her vnreasonable in hating thee so deadly that loueth her so dearly, and not espying thy owne greater madnesse, in louing her so dearly that hateth

hateth thee ſo deadly.

It might haue ſuffiſed for a rebuke once to haue intermedled with a Curtizan, and for a reproach great enough that ſo badde a woman ſhoulde bluſhe at thy companie, without thus dying a Reprobate, by ſtill dooting in thy paſſed, and purpoſed wickednesſe: leaue of therefore, if not not for ſhame, yet to auoyde ſinne: and knowe that then are the gods ſeuere in correcting when men are ſecure in offending: yea (if for nothing elſe) yet therefore ſhoulde Opheltes bee weaned from lewdneſſe, becauſe Phemonoe is wedded to lightneſſe: thou wert not her firſt choyce, neyther ſhalt thou bee her laſt change: for the loue of an harlot is not ſo tyed to any one, but that the ſame lyeth open to euerie one (Beggers and Baniſhed men by proviſo excepted) and thou being in the ſame predicamente, art therefore vnder the ſame Exception concluded: wherfore it is meere follie in thee to looke for other of cuſtome, or to hope for better of curteſie.

But whyleſt our wordes be not plauſible, our counſels ſeeme not profitable: and with ſtrong reaſons to reſiſt loue, were, perhaps, to labour my ſelfe mad with reaſon: For ſuch loue (if I may ſo miſ-tearme luſt) as it is eaſlier receiued, ſo is it hardlier diſgeſted then the Taint Boreſtes, that ſwallowed a Pyte ſwelleth a Monſter: if therefore, Opheltes, thou wilt not be declaimed frõ Phemonoe it reſteth then ỳ Phæmonoe bee reclaimed to thee: which to contriue aſketh coſt, for kindly it is for ſuch Hawkes to ſoare from an empty Fiſt: but Opheltes lacketh, will you ſay, and is therefore helples, but Alcippe lyueth, do I ſay, & therefore not hopeleſſe, ſhe liueth, in deede, to profit thee with a triple benefit, to reſtoore to thee thy liberty & to recouer for thee the moity of thy liuing, to which only Riſe is Phemonoe in ſequens. Admit therefore Alcippe to ſtand thee in this ſteede, whoſe patience, I know, is ſo liable to thy paſſions, that to worke thee a ſecond delight, ſhe will indure be it a ſeconde deuorſe.

At the naming of Alcippe did Opheltes sigh, and turning his face letteth fall plenty of teares, making at the length vnto her, whom not yet he knew to be Alcippe, such answere.

The tydinges (saith he) are most ioyfull to Opheltes that Alcippe is yet lyuing, but seeing it is currant in eche mans mouth, and also confirmed in mine owne mind, that my falshood towards her doth rather merit a most shamefull death, then the acceptance of such vndeserued assistance, I am much more prone to ratifie the first doome by myne owne handes, then apte to receiue the latter grace by her helpe: wherefore I beseech thee to declare to Alcippe, that dying I wish vnto her all good fortune, whō only I haue made altogether infortunat: but know that thy counsell as touching Phæmonoe, is like to an after-showre that falleth when flowres, and rootes are alreadie wythered: I am determyned to die, and my determynation shall not bee chaunged, for why, to liue vncriled and wealthely shoulde bee much lesse pleasinge to men, then to die from inwarde veration and outwarde infamie. Onely bee assured (gratious Damsell) that I account this the last, and not the least of my miseries, not to bee able to recompence thee for thy passed and present kindnesse, for the which the heauens graunt thee, what I, besides thankes, haue not to giue thee.

Cap. 42.

ALcippe not a little discouraged at this wilfull answere of his, as her last refuge, made her selfe knowne to her husbande, whom with hartie teares, shee intreateth to vse her if not as a wife (of which name shee sayde her selfe vnworthy) yet at least-wise, as an instrument to discharge him of the kinges Sentence, and as the meane whereby to recouer his extented landes, & suspended libertie.

To

To be shoꝛt, Opheltes now acknowledging her, seemed confounded with shame, and in conclusion being wholye conquered with the consideration of her so rare patience, policie, constancie, and (which was not inferiour to ỹ rest) her beauty, confessed his falshood, repented him of his folie, craued pardon foꝛ both, and vowed following loyaltie: and hereupon from wondering and weeping, fell they to kissing and imbracing.

In which mean while, Phœmonoe (by euill aduenture) entered the place, who perceiuing their mutuall teares, & admiring their vnusuall familiaritie, whether it were offended therewithall, oꝛ fearing least Opheltes, after the time pꝛescribed foꝛ his banishment, being taken in her house mighte so turne her to damage, oꝛ that iealousie, frenzie, oꝛ malice incensed her so to doe, it shall not matter, but howsoeuer it happened, she raled so out of square vpon Opheltes with woꝛdes, and fared so roughly against Alcippe with blowes, that (after much sufferaunce) he not able longer to indure the one, oꝛ disgest the other, his Melancholie being nowe conuerted to Choloꝛ, whilste Phœmonoe thus persisted to outrage, did in his furie stab her to the hart, in such soꝛte that of the same wound shee pꝛesently died.

Immediatelye after the deede done Opheltes was appꝛehended, who as pꝛincipall, and Alcippe as Accessarie were bꝛought befoꝛe Philargus, then being in great Honour, and a Justicer in *Sardis*: who vnderstanding of the fact, and (with greefe ynough) acknowledging the offendoꝛs, because he would not be thought ouer-foꝛward in doing iustice against Opheltes, neither to slack a Justicer in reuenging the death of Phœmonoe both (as before) his enemies, but chiefly because nature would not suffer him to sit in iudgement against Alcippe, his owne, and only child, with a hart theꝛefoꝛe melting with soꝛrow hee dismissed both Pꝛisoners his pꝛesence, referring their cause to be determined by the king in his owne pꝛsō: Philargus

(good old man) in the meane while, by so muche suspending his ioy in that he had found his Daughter, by howe much he feared to loose her againe, being now to be arained of murther.

But the matter being thus brought before the king, vpon ỹ ripping vp of al Circumstances, the death of Phemonoe was though worthie her dishonest life, Opheltes and Alcippe were acquited by the king. and he receiued again into fauour, Philargus is made a ioyfull father of Alcippe, Opheltes is reconciled to him and inriched, and euerye thing amisse was now amended.

But that I may now reduse your memories, and retire your eares to the historie whereof I principallye intreat, that is, of the cause and euent of Atys and Abynados their Quest and trauels, you are to remember that Arbaces the olde *Meade* and his Companion, leauing behind them in their place Sorares and his *Assirians*, are (as before is sayd) escaped out of the barren Iland, frō whence they safely ariued at *Sarmatia*: and from thence againe, as pittying the distresse wherein they had left Sorares and his company, and for their deliuery they are alreadye resailed to the barren Iland: vnto whom and to Sorares, Atys and Abynados whome we are now to ship from *Lydia*, hapned as immediately doth now followe.

(*.*)

Arbaces.

Arbaces.

Pars Calami primi.

Cap. 52.



After that Atys and Abynados had made lōg abode in *Lydia*, hauing receaued great intertainmente and Giftes of the king, they shippe themselues and their companye, cheefelye directing their Course towardes *Sarmatia*: but as they had no absolute knowledge there to finde those persons for whome they sought, so in this their sayling they did not precisely obserue any direct course, but entered now and than into such adiacent Seas, Creekes & Channels, into which likelihoods, profit, pleasure, or necessitie did carrie them. So that in riding vpon the floud *Tanais*, which doth diuide the *Scythians* from the *Sarmatians*, thy coast by a very pleasaunt and dilectable Ilande: here did they lande their men, in purpose to haue taken in fresh water, and other prouigion. But farre had they not forraged frō their ship, disorderly roming (as vnsuspitious of that whiche hapned) when the Ilanders who from the nert mountains had espied their arriuall, lying a great number in ambushment, had sodainly inclosed them in on euery syde, their barbarous darts and weapons for the most part, bearing (to the great terror of the *Asirians*) the bloody tokens of some very late slaughter.

That

What cold the *Assirians* now doe, or rather what did they not that valiant and couragious men shoulde haue done? many they slew, and some of them were slaine: but in the ende, the multitude of the Ilanders prevailed against the manhood of the *Assirians*: who being thus captiuated were anon committed to bands, and than brought before the Gouernesse or rather Goddesse of those Ilanders.

For such was the superstitious errour of the people in those idolatrous dayes, that whosoeuer had extirped Tyrannts, ciuiled Nations, confounded Monsters, or else by prowes, wisedome, Inuention, or by any extraordinarie good, profited any common Wealth and Countrie, the same liuing was magnified for more than a man and dead canonised a God: so that easier was it thē for men to make Gods, then for such their Gods to make men.

By this meanes therefore it came to passe, that those Ilanders had alreadie in deuotion, deified their Gouernesse Dircilla: for such as was Pallas to the *Grecians*, and Isis to the *Ægyptians*, so and suche was she to this people: and albeit yeres (for now was she very aged) had wrought a naturall decay in her beautie being yet more then ordinarie, neyther place, time, nor troubles had so empayred the Maiestie of her lookes, or impugned the magnanimity of her hart, but that armed much to the *Amazonian* fashion, she seemed more warlike thē Penthisilea, or rather more terrible then Bellona her selfe.

In such wise issuing out of her portatiue Tent, after she had twise or thrise shaked her prefull Launce, in signe of her vnappeasable furie against the *Assirians*, shee lefte vnto the wretched Captiues the same comfort, as if they had presentlye beheldе the heade of Meduſa: and as the fiercenesse of those her lookes had ynough of feare, so the deliuerie of these her wordes had nothing of hope.

Arc (qd. she, to the Ilanders) the bands, and captiuitie

of

of these vngratious people sufficient (thinke you) to warrant your safetie: or haue I pleasure (suppose you) to see their bodies yet breathing, vpon whose Ghosts also were it possible, we should doe execution? was I yesterday deceaued in those *Assirians* whom I commaunded you to execute, as the Espials and Agents of some other their Accomplicers: or thinke you by intercepting of them, and these you haue disappointed their Confederacie: no, no, be ye assured that the expedition of their Treasons, doth not only consist vpon these two Companies: esteeme therefore all haste ouer little, vntill you haue mingled their blood with the bowels of the others, their Explorors: otherwise it will come to passe, and that before you looke for it, but not sooner than I (experienced of their treacheries) feare it, that these Rouers and Robbers of ỹ whole world, being by their tyrannous countrimen (alreadie perchaunce at point of their arriuall) rescued out of our hands, shal stand them in no small steed to the cutting of your throates, and the conquest of this our Iland.

Haue you forgot how yester-day, euen the sentence of death could not pluck down the courage of their Companions: and why: forsooth reason had they to hope, that expected this helpe: and marke you not also howe the careless countinaunces of these our Thrals, doe not so muche argue a contempt of death, as the like hope that their armed Confederates are already marching to their rescue? once againe therefore I say, let your hast in putting them to death, cut off their hope in purposing vpon life: of lyfe sayd I? yea and hauing made a massacre of your liues, and pray of your Countrie, to suruiue you in the one, and succeede you in the other.

To Atys Abynados, and to the rest this her Sentence seemed no more seuere, then to be charged of Confederacie with before executed *Assirians* strange: but therin to haue bene guiltie or not guiltie was all one, it sufficing to Dircilla her wrath, and their deaths onely that they were

Assirians: vnto whiche people (the occasion why hereafter following) she had vowed her selfe a deadly enemie.

Cap. 53.

Whilst she was yet speaking, diuers of the Ilanders (as purposing a generall slaughter) in great fury ran to a Caue not far of, and anon return, rigorously driuing before thē certain *Assirians*, whom the day before they had taken forraging in the Iland, and of whose deaths Dircilla their Gouernesse, had before giuen them in commaundement.

But the Ilanders, being naturally pittiful, altogether vnacquainted with sheading of blood, and dwelling as it were in a world by themselues, had neuer till then seene Shippe or Straunger: and therefore, had not the fierce words and wrath of Dircilla more preuailed, then the inhumanitie, or malice of those harmelesse people, the *Assirians* had not only not bene assailed and captiuated, but also, such admiration did their beauty and brauery strike in to the harts of the idolatrous Ilanders, that eyther they had easily beleeued them to be Gods, or at the least-wise durst not haue made proofe of their manhoods. But Dircilla commaunding, whose words to them were as Oracles, they feared not to enterprise, were it neuer so rare, or great an Aduenture: only herein (as moued with compassion) they had borrowed of their vsuall obedience, in that they had not, according to her commaundement the day before, done execution vpon those first-arriued *Assirians*.

Wherfore Dircilla, contrary to her thought, seeing them yet liuing whose death she had commaunded, one while fixing her froward eies vpon the miserable Captiues, and anone casting her frouning lookes vpon the Ilanders, after she had, with sharp reprehensions, rebuked them of disobedience, and reproued them of foolish pitie, & that her

words

wordes had now made them altogether as pittileſſe, as her owne purpoſe was cruel, ſhe cauſed both the firſt, and laſt company of the *Aſſirians* to aſſend the toppe of a ſteepe Rocke, from whence to be ſloung downe headlong, was the death whereunto they were all adiudged, by this angrie Virago.

Great was the generall lamentation that the Aſſirians then made, and no leſſe the admiration that either companie had of this their heauie, and vnexpected meeting, and that amongſt ſo barbarous a people: howbeit of all this time, on neither part was any acquaintance take, for they all ſeemed ſtraungers one to another. But anon, as the friend imbraceth his friend, and ech man encourageth his fellow, with patience and conſtancie to leaue his life, and as Atys and Abynados plie them, now to one place, & then to an other, ſtill with godly exhortations, ſtrengthening the fainting courages of ſome their fearefull Countriemen, amõgſt the firſt-ariued Aſſirians, they eſpied Sorares their father. But, alas, the maner of this their diſmal meting was ſo much the more lamentable, by howe much more the ſame might haue bene ioyfull, had they not bene croſſed by this miſfortune: there might one ſee ỳ Sonnes to want all tokens of gladneſſe in ſaluting their Father, and the Father furniſhed with all ſignes of heauineſſe in intertaining his Sonnes: and the ſkilfulleſt Painter in making a ſeuerall Counterfeit to euery ſorowfull countinaunce, either ſhould haue ben grounded in varietie, or elſe haue painted more then one Agamẽnon, vnder a vale, bemoning the death of Iphigenia. Yea ſo pitifull were the confuſed Cries, & this doleful Spectacle, euen to the Iladers themſelues, that moued with compaſſion, they made no haſt at all to do execution, as was the ſeuere commaundement of their Gouerneſſe.

But Dircilla only conſtant in her crueltie, & the rather, when ſhe perceaued the miniſters of her wrath thus ſuddenlye enclined to mercy, being ſet in a double chaufe,

did ſingle out from either company of the *Aſſirians* two of the moſt aged perſons: and then hardly with-holding her Fiſt from their faces, and her Lawnce frō the boſoms of her own people, vſed theſe following ſpeeches.

Cap. 54.

HOw farre off (fooliſh and vngrateſull people) I am euen from any tirannous thoughte whereof it ſeemeth you haue me in ieloſie, the ſelf-witneſſe of theſe two auncient murderers, may happily fit me with a ſufficient purgation: for as I perſwade my ſelfe that al *Aſſirians* generally are fleſhed with blood, ſo I eaſily coniecture that theſe two, in reſpect of their yeres, ſhould be parties, or at the leaſt wiſe priuie to thoſe murthers whereof I ſhall now ſpeake: yea, although a godleſſe life hath commonly a graceleſſe ende, yet it may be that theſe olde Homoſides (whom if you ſhall ſpare, a natural death will ſhortly diſpatche) will at the laſt penitentlye confeſſe, what at the leaſt I perticularly expreſſe. But if it fall out againſte my gueſſe, yet either ſhal I make the very name of an *Aſſirian* odious in your eares, or by reporting my iuſt quarrell, proue my ſelf guiltleſſe of tiranny. Omitting therefore to be curious, as touching the treacherous arriual of ỹ *Aſſirian* Armies into *Media* my natiue countrie, vnder conduct of their butcherous Emperor Ninus, it ſhall ſuffiſe that my weeping eyes ſomwhat eaſing my hart, ſhal anon licence my toung, in few, to touch with what beſtial cruelty they ordered their bloody Conqueſt. Theſe mine eyes behelde the roiall Pauilion of king Farnus my Father conſumed with fire, which way ſoeuer I looked the countrey abrode was al a flame: here mighte I ſee an heape of *Meades* newly ſlaughtered, there the *Aſſirians* to perſeuer in ſleying: this Villain murthereth a Matron ouer the dead body of her ſonne or huſband, ỹ Ruffen hailleth, by her faire heare, ſome noble Virgin to rauiſhmēt, death or captiuity:

one

one sundereth the impotent olde-man in sporte, an other sleaeth the strong-membred yong-mā in dispight: yea in euerie corner was such murdering, sacking, captiuating, racking, rifling, and horror what not: that death seemed least damage that the poore *Medes* then sustained. If the rehearsal of this common Calamitie will not sufāce, I haue also a particuler complaint against the *Assirians*: who (then in which they might not haue perpetrated greater crueltie) hauing pupolely made the Kinge and Queene my parentes eye-witnesses, of the most miserable condicion of their Subiectes and Signorie, did also, euen in their sight, murder seuen yonge Princes their children: and (least in any one thing, they might seeme not to haue outraged in tyrannie) with the luke-warme blood of the children they mingled also the bloode of the parentes: leauing me of their frutefull issue the onelye Remaine. But more then this, and (who was fully as deare, or dearer to me then parentes, brethren or country) in this bloody businesse I lost by death or captiuitie, I wot not which, Duke Arbaces, ah Arbaces my husband, who not long before had made me a mother of an vnfortunate Sonne, was then bereft me. Also when the *Assirians* should depart, mine harmefull beautie procured my shipping towardes *Assiria*, for why, the Emperour had in his purpose appointed me one of his Concubynes: with which purpose of his I, desolate I, became so perplexed, that from thencefoorth breaking truce with my patience, I was rather to seeke of a desperate practise then a consenting will to haue perished, in somuch, that the motherly care of my Babe then hanging on my breast, had not bayled me from death, if a worser occurrant had not withstood so an good occasion: for by the commandement of Asiolanta the Empresse (being now enuious of my beautie, and waxing iealous of her husbandes liking) I was all alone set a shoare in this Ilande, by which meanes I also forwent my sweete Infant: and vntill now, my desartes

more(as appeareth)then your deuotions, haue giuen me here intertainment. It is not vaine-glory (I speake not now to these *Assirians*, whom I worthely maligne, but to you the Inhabitants of this Iland, whom vnworthely I haue profited) ỳ moueth me thus to vaut deserts, but your owne vnthankfulnesse that will not value my merits: for meete though it be, that you vouche the heauens for the matter of your wealth, whereof you long were ignorant, yet amisse were it not, to vouchsafe me a prerogatiue in ỳ manner and vse, as first deliuered vnto you by mine inuention. I founde you without Gods, without Religion, without Lawes, or Gouernment, naked, wild, brutish, & beast-like, feeding on Roots, harbouring in Bushes, feare full of your owne shadowes, and to discribe you in a word, Monsters wrapped in man-like habbites: but in these through mine industry you haue now Reformatiõ, & were it not that prouender doth pricke you, and fulnesse make you foolish, only you, might be said an happie people: and that, ỳwis, not so much in respect the naturall pleasure, and plentie of this your popilous Iland (through a terrestriall Parradise) as in that mine experience and plat-forme hath warned you, and might haue armed you frõ the Incursions of these Tyrants, the cõmon Skourge to all people: against whom, not without cause as you haue heard, my tongue long since hath proclaimed deadly Foade, neither, in seeking reuenge, shal mine hart breake Couenante, with the diseased ghostes of my murdered friendes. But (on Gods name) be it so, that neither *Media* for example, my selfe for merittes, the *Assirians* for their mischiues, our law for iustice, you for duety, nor I for authoritie, be it so, I say, that none of these haue that waight of argument, to winne you reuenging Instruments, to wreake my teene vpon these Tyrantes: yet at the least-wise, be prouident for your owne safety, and preuent your owne euilles, by punishing these your apparant enemies: of whom the question is not, whether they all haue iump-

ped

ped vppon one diuelish Actempt, that is, the conquest of you and your Countrie (all circumstances directly approuing such consequent) but, because according to the mind of the offendor we are to measure offences, & for that there may be mercy in punishing, and crueltie in sparing, let vs see whether of the two, pittie or punishment is in this case more requisite. If this offence of the *Assirians* had bene committed through ignorance, infirmitie, prouocation on our parte, through rashnes (for sometimes rashnesse, and such like infirmities are in some men as sicknesses) if priuatly against one, or a few, or by your known foes, then I deny not, but that mercie might haue borrowed of Justice: but I will cleare them (as men that wil not offend but in the highest degree) of these petite faults, and charge them with capitall crymes. They (least herein they should degenerate from *Assirians*) of pretended mallice without matter, haue hoysted their sayles to forren windes, and vsed their vnpeaceable weapons against vnknowen people: not for Enmitie, but for Ambition, not ignorantly by chance, but aduisedly by counsel, not rashly, but resolutely, not against some, but against all, not because you deserue warre, but because they dispise peace: yea, had not I fore-warned you, as hauing had tryall of their trecheries, you should haue sealt their woundes before you could haue feared their words: and after they had glutted them selues with Slaughters, Rauishments, Sacrileges, Burninges, Spoylinges, and all kinde of Mischieues, the Ruines of your Iland should not haue priuileged the Suruiuours of you, frō their intollerable Slauery. If this much, which might suffise for me to charge them, & for you to correct them be yet insufficient, then haue I also Reason, & Honestie Coparsuadors herof: Reason I say, because better a few be punished then a multitude should perish, & Honestie, because in a manner may, and will not, you take vpon your selues the Offence of the Offendoures, and betray the good whilest

you

you boulster the bodde: for Impunitie is the Spynge of Carelesnesse, the Mother of Insolencie, the roote of impudencie and the Nurse of al Transgressions. For shame therefore, Sirs, inchaunt your harmefull pittie, and remember that not to correct is to consent to the Crime. Better it is that I remember you of the perill, then you repent you of your pitty, for if you staie vntil Experience, the Philosophie of Fooles, hath taught you what I haue tolde you, then, to your costes, you shall finde that the *Assirians* be men enemies to mankinde, not to bee made your friendes by Compulsion or Composition, whose enmitie commeth of Custome, and not by occasion: euen this disgrace, if they escape, that their liues & liberties were in your power to giue, or take is vnnaturall for their natures to digest, for which (were there no other cause) their cankared Stomackes shal requite your sufferance with the abuse of you patience: it is a thing impossible, to reconcile an hart hardned with pryde and mallice to honestie. But what? is it decēt that I pleade before mine own Vassails? that I intreate as a Subiect whome I should commaunde as a Soueraine? my sufferance, I see, is cause of your stubbornesse, & my curtesie of your cōtempt: At my first comming when I might haue had adoration as a Goddesse, I was not then so hautie as to take it, and now that I should haue obedience as you Gouernesse, you are not so humble as to giue it: thus deale you with mee as did the Frogges with Iupiters Rafter, you make me a Stock, but beware these Stoyks. And truely, seeing you haue not deserued why I should be longer carefull of you and your welfare, and for, that by disobedience, you will needes inflict vpon your selues so grieuous a punishmēt, I also giue my consent (a reuenge too great I confesse) that these our Captiues be anon deliuered to their ships: that, being insufficient of them selues, they may inuite frō *Assiria* the distruction, and ruine of you, your wiues, your children, your goodes, and your whole countrie: for enough

nough haue the *Aſsirians* ſeene in this our Iſlande, to allure hether multitudes of Inuadours.

Cap. 55.

THeſe her wordes, had now ſo incenſed the mindes of the Iſlanders againſt the *Aſsirians*, that euerie of them was clearely reſolute in the death of his Priſoner: but for that one of the two olde Captiues, whom Dircilla had (as before) ſingled out, and whom her wordes had now eſpecially touched to the quicke, was ſuddenly bereft his ſences, and falne in a ſowne: And for that the Iſlanders ſtoode vppon expectation of ſome further confeſſion, to be deliuered by the ſeconde olde-man, who was alredy, in way of aunſwere to Dircilla, entred into ſome and theſe following ſpeaches, therefore vntill he ſhoulde ende, the determined ſlaughter receiued a ſeconde adiornement.

I proteſt (qd. this aged man) by whatſoeuer God hath care of vs and this Countrie, by the Sunne, and the holy Fire of *Caldia*, and as euerie of theſe ſhall, in this life, cõfort my withered Carcaſe, more fit for the wormes thẽ the worlde, and doe good to my Soule, when it ſhall leaue the wearieſome priſon of this my body, I ſhall, Lady, neither diſſemble for feare, accuſe for enuie, or excuſe for affection, but as touching that wherewithall we are nowe charged, vtter all that I know, and know all to be troth I ſhall vtter.

For my ſelfe therefore I ſay, that moſt trewe and too trewe it is, that the *Aſsirians*, then conducted by Ninus, committed ſuch and the ſame before remembred outrages, ſlaughters, and ſpoyles in *Media*, neither were you deceiued in gueſſing ſome of vs to bee priuie, or parties to that byſines, wherein (to ſaye troth) my ſelfe was no ſmall parte: but howe? not (alas) as a Spoyler with the *Aſsirians*, but as a Sufferer with the *Meades*, for *Media* is the place of my hearth, *Aſsiria* only of mine

aboade. And for these *Assirians*, mine owne companie I meane, I say, Ladie, that not charging them with the faultes of their Auncestours, or any further then wherein them selues be guiltie, you, but especially yours haue greter cause of kindnesse, then of any crueltie: for proofe and better credit wherof, beside my former protestation, somewhat it is (whom since my hither comming I haue not heard named) that I know you to be Dircilla, wife & Ladie to the Duke Arbaces: but more, that I the speaker of these wordes am Orchamus brother vnto the same your husbande: and more then so, the man vnto whose care, when suddenly, at the commaundement of the Emperise, you were snatched from out your Cabben, you commended your yong Sonne, saying: Ah good Orchamus, if thy fortune proue better then ỳ destinies of al thy friends, be a Parent to thy poore Nephewe, whome with more griefe I leaue an Orphant, thẽ to haue seene him buried: I well remember the wordes, and, me-thinkes, I yet see those very weepinges which pearced mine heart, at this our lamentable separation. Since which time (Dircilla) I haue not onely bene carefull to answere the same your trust, but also, beyonde expectation, I found Fortune and opportunitie therein afflicting. For no sooner was the *Assirian* Fleete aryued at home, but that Ninus (not a little displeased at your losse, the which by the Emperise, & her ministers was smoothly cloaked with a colourable excuse) but that Ninus, I say, caused your Sonne to bee nursed and nurtured with prince-like attendance: and when his age serued, who then of greater credit and courage, or a more notable Captaine then was Sorares, amongst the *Assirians*? But in the returne of the imperiall Nauie from the *Bactrian* warres, by occasion of a sudden tempest then happening, Sorares your Sonne, my nephew and all the companie aboorde his ship, were lost from the rest, in the Sea *Caspium*. Now when this heauie newes was bruted at *Niniuie*, I, Atys, and Abynados, his two

Sonnes

Sonnes (for he hath made you a grãdmother of these two Gentlemen) and these other, his, and our friends, vowing our selues in his continual Quest, haue three yeares alredy, trauailed many Countries and Seas, to find out Sorares: through occasion whereof, as also to take in fresh water and other necessaries, and not vpon any such purpose as you pretende, we are arryued in this Iland, and lo, yonder-same (he pointed to Sorares) is the man farre sought, but vnluckely here founde, if finding him wee loose our selues, and with the ende of our labours, make also an ende of our liues.

Cap. 56.

IN few, what with this talke, and other more effectuall tokens, Dircilla being brought to her Creede, and left in *de profundis*, rather musing at their meeting being so straunge, then mistrusting the matter being credited, or euer she might imbrace Sorares, or reply to Orchamus, was interrupted by the seconde Olde-man, the other of the two singled-out Captiues: who in a ioyfull extasie, suddenly clapped her (frowardly disdayning his imbracinges, as not yet cooled of her former chaufe) betwixte his braune-fallen armes. But when he saw her lookes, not vnlike to those in the picture of Proserpina, newly rapted by Pluto, it entered then his thought, that rashly to iest with Sainctes or edg-tooles, might proue daungerous: wherefore as doubting the like reward, that had Aesops kind Asse, vnkinde-like imitating the wanton Spanniel, for the time therefore charming such his kindnesse, anon he founde opportunitie, thus to chaunge her coynesse.

I giue place, sayde he, to the time, but not to Dircilla, whome these armes (pythlesse though they nowe bee) once coulde, nay often did, not violently but willingly imbrace (may I so blabbe) euen in the bedde of Arbaces: blushe not, Dircilla, blushe not, the sporte was lawfull, howsoeuer the reporte may seeme ouer liberall:

and if (for pouertie parteth friendes) you disdaine to acknowledge such acquaintance, yet at the least for Arbaces his sake, deale mercifully with these your Prisoners. As for my selfe, could I pleade no other protection then that I am olde enough not to feare death, it might suffise: but nether did I hope so well as I haue here founde, neyther doe I feare so ill as I am here threatned: Orchamus (for so your countenance promiseth a consent) hath alredy founde grace, because he is brother to your husbande Arbaces, and therefore not likely is it, that Arbaces him selfe speaking for him selfe, or rather for me, shall speede worser then doth Orchamus: neither do I make it a doubt, but that Sorares sonne to Arbaces and you, is alike deare to either parent: and of the saffetie of Atys and Abynados his sonnes, naturall loue I presume tendereth a warrantize: but now generally, and briefly as touching all these *Assirians*, my selfe, Dircilla, will be their Borrowe, if Arbaces his Baile may deliuer them of their Bandes.

To make shorte tale, Dircilla now hearing, and seeing sufficient to the acknowledging of her husbande, vnable then to moderate her sudden ioy, & in respect of her yeares and whom euen now shee seemed, vnlike to her selfe, shee lightly clasped Arbaces as redy to imbrace, as to be imbraced betwixt her armes: who mutually mixing their ioyfull teares, with louing kysses, were either of them long time bereft the vse of their tōgues: of which pleasant passions Orchamus, Sorares, Atys, and Abynodos were also glad Copartners: neither were the by-standers, aswell *Assirians*, as Ilanders exempted for idle inspectoures or euill appayed Actours in this ioyfull Accident.

After therefore more then a little ioy on all sides ouerpassed, by reason of this happie meeting thus disclosed, wherein (after many yeares, and euerie person seuerally scattered in a sundrie Countrie) the Husbande had recouered his Wife, shee her Husbande, both

both their Sonne, he his Parents, him his sonnes, hee them, the brother his brother, the kinsman his kindred, and the friend his friend, and (whiche more is) after extreme miseries attaining to such inspeakeable ioyes, yea and at that instant, when nothing was lesse hoped for then life, after (I say) this ioyful meeting, the Prisoners were all set at libertie, and bountifully feasted by Dircilla, and her Ilanders. And then euery of the *Meades* severally reported what had befalne them, since their chasing out of their countrie (as before) by Ninus.

First Arbaces tolde of their tragicall arriuall into the barren Iland, and how he and his fellow, surviuing the rest, after they had bene long shut vp there in great miserie, did deliuer themselues from thence (as in the beginning of this Booke is remembered) in the ship of Sorares, whome then, or before this very time he knew not for his Sonne: then showeth he of their safe arriuall, and good intertainment in *Sarmatia*, from whence, hauing obtained a shippe and men, as pittying the distresse wherein they had left Sorares and his *Assirians*, and for their deliuery, they againe resailed to the barren Iland: then lastly how they had no sooner taken Sorares, and his miserable souldiours aboord, and put their ship againe to the Seas, but that a sudden storme, droue them perforce vpon that same pleasaunt Iland, wherin this their ieoberdious ioy thus hapned.

Sorares, Atys, and Abynados did (in effect) no other then itterate the former report of Orchamus: and nowe was it come to Dircilla her turne to speake, whose wordes, containing a more pittiful, profitable, and pleasant discourse, then a curious deliuerie, thus follow.

Arbaces.

Cap. 57.

WHen, Arbaces, the Mariners had landed and left me poſt alone in this Iland, the day was farre ſpent, and my wits almoſt at an ebbe: then was thy name riſe in my mouth, & (though alſo in vaine) the extincte names of my dead parents, and brethren: yea mine eyes with feare, & my hart with loue, did both twain follow thoſe enuious Sayles, whereby Sorares my ſonne, then an Infant, was carried Captiue into a ſtraunge Countrey, from mee his helpeleſſe mother: and when mine eyes might no longer accompanie him through diſtaunce of Seas, yet did my hart ariue with him euen in *Aſſiria*. Anon with freſhe ſupplies did ſorrowes confuſedly ſucceede ſorrowes, being in number ſo great, and in nature ſo greeuous, that one of my then paſſions might haue ſet twentie toungs a worke, one of thoſe toungs haue cõſtrained a milliõ eies to teares, & the leaſt cauſe of thoſe teares haue killed ỹ wepers hart: neither did it alone ſuffiſe, ỹ I thus ſorrowed for thinges paſt, but I alſo feared a world of woes not vnlikly to haue followed. Here perceaued I a pleaſaunt Iland, but vnmanured (as might ſeeme) of people: retire back I could not, go forwards I durſt not, behind me raged the wide ſeas, before me muſtered the wild Deſerts, and on either ſide, heard I the vnacquainted noyſe of dreadful Monſters: and yet (troth to ſaye) I leſſe doubted the fierceneſſe of anye Monſter, that could but deuoure my body, then the falſhood of men (if any were) that might haue abuſed my beautie: for, beſides that mine Attire, not vnbeſeming the daughter of Farnus, was then very gorgious, and myne age (I being then in the flower of my youth) anſwerable to mine Attire, my beautie alſo (though I ſay it) was then ſutable to both, in commendation wherof, thy ſelf (my Arbaces) didſt, in thoſe our altian dayes, affect ouer-much the figure *Hyperbole*, & with the Ilanders here, was ỹ ſame

not

not a little effectuall to winne me fauour: but this braue bragge to such as now heare me, and did not then see me, will, no doubt, seeme more audatious in report, then authenticall for credit, yet do I speake it in this place, where erre I cannot without controulment.

These feares, I say, and a thousande like fantasies thus occupying my thoughts, suddenly I heard a boysterous rushing amongst the next boughes, foure of these Iläders anon disclosing themselues vnto my view: euery of them held in his right hand a cragged Dart, and in the lefte a great quantitie of raw flesh: at sight wherof (and a greater horror then so) when, not meanly affrighted, I beheld how gluttonously they crammed down their Mawes, the same flesh yet reaking in their teeth, & how their Chaps, beardes, breastes, armes, handes, and whatsoeuer grisslie part of them leaues had left bare, were al besmeared with blood, though death was then the least of all my feares, yet (beleeue mee) the crueltie prefigurated by this sauadge Spectacle, did strike to my hart such incomprehensible terrour, that if, at the least, sorrowes had not bereft me of sence, in comparison hereof, the sufferaunce of a simple death had bene no death, or in no part so dreadfull.

Now, whilst I applie this horrible presidente to feede my new feare, and rather dreaded, then doubted, that anon their imbrewed hands should seaze, & their rauinous teeth tire vpon me and my flesh, and I so receiue an vnnaturall burial within their bowels, the barbarous people had espied out me: who then, as Deare newly brought to the stande, with Countinances indifferently inclining to admiration and feare, stood a great while alooke off at gaze. Anon seeing me to approch them nearer and nearer, after many Satirlike freakes, with nimble feet & swift sight, they shud awaye into the nearest woods, wildly boulting through the Thickets, and with incredible facilitie, mounting and dismounting the sharp and steepe Roches.

Then

then(a strange and preposterous course mighte it seeme, if not in so desparate a case, that the Hare should followe the Hound) as I fearing pursued them flying, with purpose, at lest by falling into their hands, to haue died from such miseries, in casting my eye aside, I perceiued ꝑ Cace and carcase of a Beare, the whiche these men had newly slaughtered, and vpon whose dismēbred limbes (as might seeme) I had euen now seene them feeding. This facte of theirs as it seemed to participate a fearce and bestiall courage, so such their food did argue in them a defect of humane conditiōs, and both it, and whatsoeuer else I here beheld, presented ouer skatheful sights to mee, euen nowe so wealthie, and wanton a Lady. Thus hitherto did I salute penury at the threshold, seeming to me an intollerable hansell.

But whilste I thus lingered a dying life, Night, the discomfortable Register and Remembrencer of all miseries, had taken place of the opposite, and ouershadowed all this Countrie: then fleeted many thoughts in my minde, not only of present ieoberdies, but also of passed ioyes: and by how much more nise and delicate education, or to bee eract from so royall parentage made once to happinesse, by so much more penurie, and distresse added nowe to perpleritie and impatience: for what thing can happen more vnkindly, then that pleasaunt and good causes should varie in peruerse and bad effects? or what leaue wee with more greefe, then what we possessed with most ioy? I that lately had all, or more than I could readily aske, could not aske now any one needefull thing I might possibly haue, but as in better times I had superfluitie with supplies, so in this change of fortune I suffered necessitie with decrease: Beggers know in what, and by whome to bee releeued, but (alas) euen beggerie did by so muche better mine infortune, by howe much I neither knew to begge, nor found of whome to receiue, and (whereof Beggers are not restrained) it lay not in my choise to make chaunge of

the

the place, whatsoeuer in charitie I founde in the people.

But by that time, the torture of two or three of these dayly terrors, and nightly torments had racked Uertue from Necessitie, I tried this Crosse both possible to happen, and founde the same in euent profitable: for as the Horse late pampered vp at the full manger, and anon turned out to grasing, doth not willingly forsake his bare pasture, againe to returne to his sweete Prouendor, so I, (although my sufferaunce came at first by constraint, yet constraint growing to a custome, and custome to a confirmation of patience) vsed the Libertie of these Woods, as a Supersedias against the World: yea when my Flesh was mortified, and my Spirits quickned, I coulde then consider, that Uertue and Riches seldome couple in one body: and when I was so farre secluded from the vain delights of the world, that neither mine eyes might see thē, mine eares heare them, nor my hart hope for them, I then easily deuerted from the Compounds of Education, and reuerted to the Simples of Nature: and in so needye a life, I remembred my naked byrth, and conceiued the like of my graue. Thus profite we in diuine Uirtue, when we decay in humaine presumption: and herein onely differ we from byrute beasts, that they naturallye knowe not themselues, but such ignorannce in vs worketh vnkindly to brutishnesse.

Now, credit me, Arbaces, all seemed then vaine whiche before time I had in most value: for I remember (and I thinke the world is as it was) that in our Heads, Heares, Habbits, and behauiours, Uarietie so squared out Fashions according to our own Fantasies, that whilst Nature seemed a Dotarde, and Arte an Infant too-bad became a Brauerie: that our faces so borrowed of Phao his Bor, that the interest exceeding the loan, Beautie with some became a Banquerupt: that our Feete (proud Fooles) so troad vpon the earth as if earth, disdained to touch earth.

But smile I must to remember, how some with a Maske, a Scarfe, or a Plume, could as formally keepe their olde or black and bad faces from sight, as diode others their beautie from Sunne-burne: neyther coulde ought bee tollerated in yong, fayre, and noble Dames for their prerogatiue, that was not anon taken vp by olde, foule, and meane Drofels for pride, so that we becomming May-ladies, they would anon counterfeit Maid-marians: and yet these Apes in purple, in our fashions, gate, and niceneſſe, followed vs in nothing so effectuallye, as did some men effeminatelye, whose lockes were so like trimmed, beautie so tended, and all their ornaments so woman-like tempered, that onely to haue taken their Swordes from their sides, and then to haue giuen them Fannes in their hands, had bene altogether to resemble, with whom they did altogether desemble, women.

This did I then remember, and the vanities thereof seemed most ridiculous: alas, would I thinke to my selfe, that sometimes was as nice as the nicest, with what foolishneſſe frequent we our bodies to costly balmes and curious ornaments, which after a few dayes Death presenteth to the Graue, and the Graue to the Wormes? and why are we remisse & careleſſe in beautifying our soules, fit presents for the Gods themselues, with incorruptable vertues.

If (more thankefully be it now spoken, than the same was then accepted) aduersity would offer vnto other Ladies, or to whomsoeuer, the same opportunitie to contemplate and consider of the World, as was, and is alotted to me, Beautie would seeme Vanitie, the losse of Riches, the recouery of quietneſſe, a Ransome from Fortune, and a discouerie of our selues: and wee our selues shoulde appeare to our selues, no other then Examples of weaknes, Spoiles of Time, the Game of Fortune, Patternes of inconstancie, Receptacles of miserie, Markes for Enuie, in conception loathsome, in birth helpeleſſe, in youth witleſſe,

leſſe, in age wretched, of life vncertaine, of death ſure, and conſequently, wel ſhall they that thus ſay:

Poſt hominem vermis, poſt vermem fœtor & horror
Sic in non hominem vertitur omnis homo.

Cum fax, cum limus, cum res viliſſima ſimus,
Vnde ſuperbimus? ad terram terræ redimus.

Therfore ſhould we behaue our ſelues here, not as though we liue only for our bodies, but as though we coulde not liue without bodies: neither ſo to follow the worlde, that we alſo fall with the world, which being ours, we are not our own. But hitherto haue you not heard, how I fell in with theſe Ilanders: the order whereof I ſhall now tell you.

Cap. 58.

THeſe conſiderations (my deare Arbaces) at the fyrſte vrged of neceſſitie, and then vſed as neceſſarie, beſides the place it ſelfe, whiche ſeemed a ſeconde *Elyſium*, or of pleaſure, and plentie Nature her Store-houſe: wherein eche Hill might ſeeme a *Parnaſſus*, eche Valley an *Edon*, eche Groue a *Tempe*, and eche Water a *Tagus*: and more-ouer (which did not a little delight) with theſe the people alſo, the men and nimble Ladds of this Ilande, vnto whom, if wee graunte their then Attire and wildneſſe, and from theſe other except their Goate-like Members and Manners, they ſhoulde ſeeme righte Fani, or Satirs: or rather, in reſpecte of their perſonages (mighte not the Compariſon ſeeme Sacralegious to his Deitie) in ſteede of Dartes, arming them with bow and quiuer, ſuch as was ſayde luſtie Nomius in the fieldes of *Theßalie*.

And what ſhal I ſpeake of mine own Ser': whoſe louelye faces were ſuche as you nowe ſee, and whoſe beautifull bodies, becauſe I deſcried them little better

then bare, had the discouerie bene yours, might, perhaps, otherwise haue delighted your wanton eyes: beleeue me, so Nymph-like were their faces and fashions, that whether it were, in beholding the calme seas, that they tripped on the Shoare, they seemed such as are reported the Nereides: or that they flounc themselues into some pleasaunt Fountain, they resembled the Naiades: or that they kept the ayrsome Mountaines, they represented the Oreades: or that amongst the Woods casting themselues into a ring, they daunced their Roundiloes, or gathering sweete Gayes, they decked themselues with Flowers, or that they couched their white lives on the softe Hearbes, in these also they mighte haue bene taken for the Dryades.

By assistaunce, I say, of these, that is, Patience, Time, Place, People, and this sweete and vnhyreatned Libertie (the only remembraunce of thee Arbaces, and of Sorares my sonne excepted) I made not only a resistaunce for the time, but at length a finall conquest of Fortune. And hauing secretlye, and sufficiently obserued the harmelesse maners and dispositions of these people, and in all things reformed my selfe to their fashions, when opportunitie serued, I fell in with the rest, & behaued my selfe so formally that (no one suspecting to the contrarie) I was taken for an here-hreede Ilanderesse: but by this meanes chanced my Credit, and Authority.

Hauing thus by little and little crept in acquaintance, after a while (as moued so to doe, by reason of my colde attier and coulder lodging, more naturall to them then vsuall to me, albeit both to thē and me tollerable ynough, because then this, no Climate may be more temperate) I happned one Euening, a great number of the Ilanders being then present, with a Flint-stone to strike fyre, and therewithall to kindle an heape of sticks and other drie matter: but lo (a thing vnthoughte of) they who neuer before had seene Fire, but supposed the same to be some miracu-

miraculous Accident presently derived from the Sonne, which they worshipped for their God, as people therefore rauished of their sences, and holding both it and me in reuerent admiration, they offer diuine worship: which I refusing, by many familier instaunces, informed them in this and other matters: so far-forth neuertheless, aduauntaging my selfe by such their superstitious inclynations, as in their vnciuile manners, dyet, apparell, dwellinges, prouision, religion, and such like, might tende to the more easier Reformation: in which thing I dealing with them by degrees, & according to their Capacities, did in time, profit them to a more ciuile Perfection. And then, whereas they belecued me a Goddesse, I remoued also that profitable Errour, but might not renounce the Gouernment of them, & their Countrie: which charge, with a general consent, would I, or would I not, they haue cast vpon me.

Cap. 59.

AS Dircilla thus parled, and while the Riualles sate yet banqueting in her Bowers, they discryed a great flame assending from out the Sea, whereof Arbaces desirous to know the reason, was thus answered: that certaine of the Flanders, ignorant of that that was hapned, finding his sheepe in the Docke, had fired both it and all the ballace therein, being a great Masse of treasure: with which newes Arbaces seeming much disquieted, was in conclusion by Dircilla thus appeased.

Ouer-passed Damages, qd. shee, haue made me prouident in following daungers, and therefore (albeit at this time, ignorant of this action, wherin thy presence, Arbaces, might haue bene a countermaunde to our Custome) yet generally before time, as concerning the *Assirians*, haue I commaunded such burninges and ambushmentes: as a thing profitable to our peace, and in perfor-

mance

maunce eaſſe, and to that ende continually haue maintayned watches in euerie our Coſtes: by which meanes no Repoꝛter hath allured hether Innadours, and our own people, keeping within their owne boundes, remaine vncoꝛrupt of ſtraunge manners and pꝛactiſes. But alas (and then teares were ioyned to woꝛdes) what meaneth, Arbaces, this thy troubled countenaunce foꝛ thy burnt ſhip, as though thou wouldeſt reſaile without me, that in this place haue vowed my buriall: to thoſe white heares of thine, and to one ſo vnfoꝛtunatly croſſed of the woꝛld, delightfull reſt ſhoulde, me-thinkes, ſeeme moꝛe agreable, then doubtful trauels.

If thou, being then a Pꝛince, and yong, couldeſt not in *Media* auoide the *Aſſirian* tyꝛannie, if the Treaſure (I cite thine owne repoꝛte) from thence tranſpoꝛted into the barren Ilande, cauſing ſuch effuſion of bloode, and in the ende onely poſſeſſed of two, had no vertue becauſe no vſe, if after thine owne deliuerie, in waffing alſo from that impꝛiſonment Sorares thine vnknowen ſonne, and his companions, the Seas ruled thy Sterne, & the ſtoꝛmes were thy Pilots, if I ſay, in Youth, in Age, in wealth, in waute, on Lande, and on Sea, thou haſt experienced ſuch incertaintie and perils, and laſtly if after all theſe, yea and that when no other then a foule death was expected, thou haſt recouered thy Wife, thy Sonne, thy ſonnes Children, thy Bꝛother, and with them a Kingdom, yea a kingdome foꝛ pleaſure matching *Bœotia*, and foꝛ pꝛofit comparable to the beſt part in *Nabathia*, why then doeſt thou not, I ſay, renounce thoſe olde perils, and reſt contented with theſe new pleaſures? of which though three partes were wantjng, yet, beleeue me, Arbaces, a contented minde is better then a kingdome, and the woꝛlde, at the beſt, woꝛſer then a Paraſite.

This ſhe ſaide, and Arbaces hauing alreꝺy aſſented in himſelfe, did eaſily conſent to her, as one not ſo much turned by woꝛdes, as tyꝛed with the woꝛlde: who, as alſo

Orchamus

Orchamus, Sorares, Atys, Abynados, and all the *Assirians* esteeme themselues rapt vp into a third heauen, so inspeak-was the ioy of such their meeting, and the pleasure and plentie of this their Ilande. And thus to conclude, those whome I founde in Charons Boate I nowe leaue in Iupiters Boosome.

FINIS.

Sat velle, si non posse.

Imprinted at London by Thomas Purfoote, and are to be sold at his shop ouer-against S. Sepulchres-Church.